

PALMERS

FROM

BRAMFORD, SUFFOLK, UK

TO

NELSON AND KAIKOURA, NZ

BY

MARY SKIPWORTH DECEMBER 2024

EXTENDING AND ILLUSTRATING IVAN SKIPWORTH'S 1975 PAPER IN PART 1, ADDING PARTS 2 – 5.



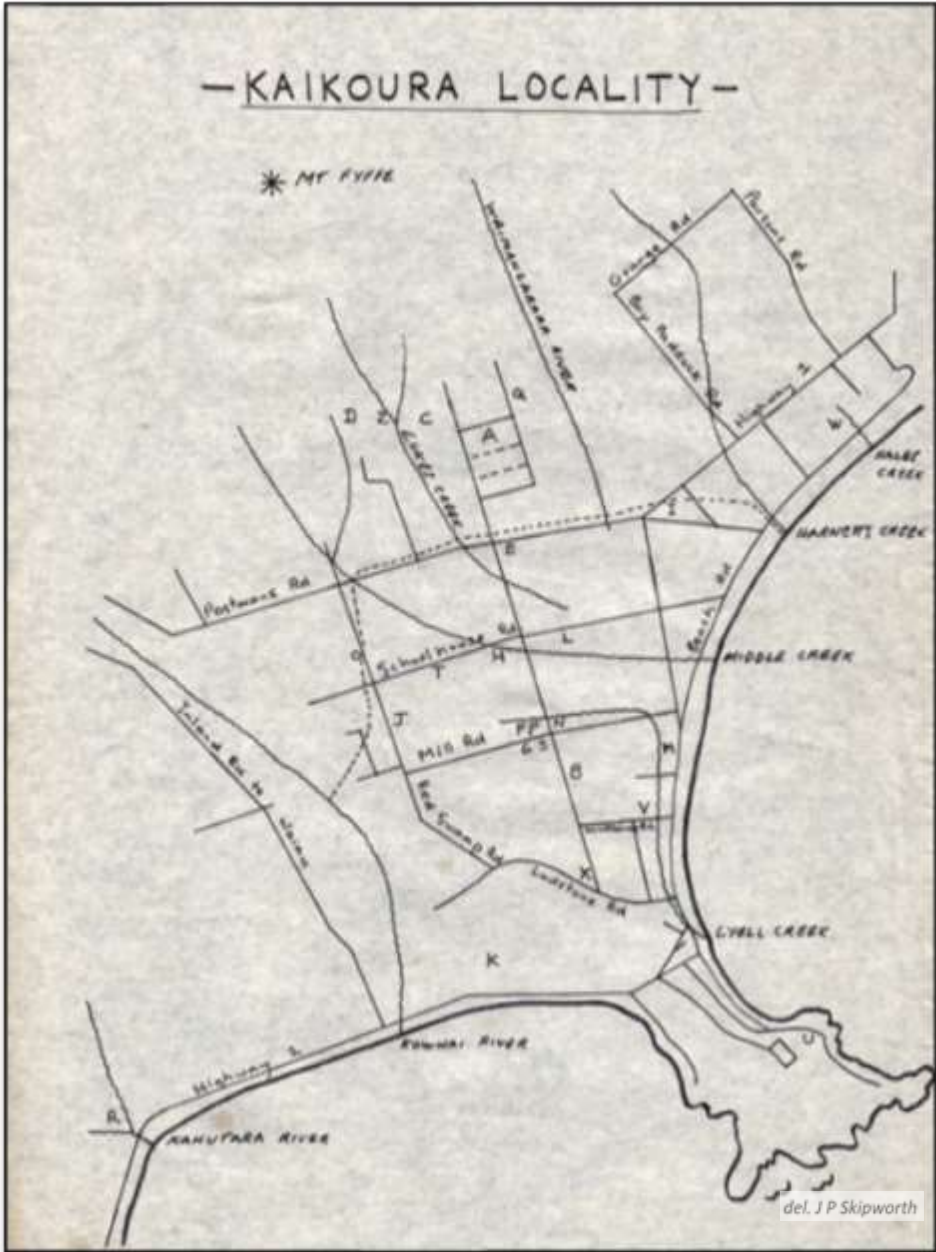
CHARLES HEAPHY: VIEW OF NELSON HAVEN ON TASMAN'S GULF NOV 1841

at anchor: Will Watch Whitby Arrow
Charles Palmer first came to New Zealand on *Whitby* 1841

TABLE OF CONTENTS

TABLE OF CONTENTS	2
MAP: KAIKOURA LOCALITY.....	4
CHART: PALMERS OF BRAMFORD, SUFFOLK	5
PART 1: PALMER FAMILY STORY	6
INTRODUCTION [MARY SKIPWORTH].....	7
INTRODUCTION 1975 [IVAN SKIPWORTH]	9
SALOME WAYLAND [#35] - INTERVIEW	9
BRAMFORD VILLAGE, SUFFOLK [IVAN].....	11
JOHN PALMER [#6] OF BRAMFORD, CHARLES' FATHER [MARY]	13
MIRIAM PALMER [#6] CHARLES' MOTHER [MARY]	13
MIRIAM PALMER'S 1847 LETTER TO SALOME [MARY].....	14
CHARLES PALMER [#12] TRAVELS TO NEW ZEALAND [IVAN].....	17
ITEMS AT TE PAPA [MARY].....	18
"WHITBY OR WILL WATCH" [IVAN].....	19
CHALES PALMER'S LETTER TO <i>NEW ZEALAND JOURNAL</i>	19
TIMELINE: CHARLES PALMER [#12] - FIRST VISIT TO NEW ZEALAND [MARY]	20
SIR CHARLES NAPIER AND <i>H.M.S. POWERFUL</i> [IVAN].....	21
CHARLES PALMER'S SWORD [MARY].....	22
CHARLES PALMER AND THE NEW ZEALAND COMPANY [IVAN AND MARY]	23
JOHN PALMER [#11] OF <i>THE GABLES</i> , WAIMEA WEST [IVAN].....	24
SALOME PALMER [#14] [IVAN AND MARY]	24
ROBERT PALMER (#16) OF KAIKOURA, THE YOUNGEST SON [IVAN]	26
THE MOA'S EGG [IVAN]	30
MIRIAM'S WIDOWHOOD [MARY].....	31
PHOTOGRAPH "MIRIAM PALMER AND ROBERT PALMER" [MARY]	33
CHARLES PALMER MOVES TO KAIKOURA [IVAN].....	35
FLOODING AT APPLEBY, AND LAND TRANSFERS [IVAN].....	37
CHARLES WEBBER PALMER [#30] – THE FORGOTTEN SON [MARY].....	40
EDMUND "OSCAR" PALMER [#31] [IVAN]	43
THE TWENTIETH CENTURY BRINGS FAMILY DISPERSAL [IVAN]	45

PART 2: FAMILY REGISTER - PALMER OF BRAMFORD [MARY]	53
FIRST GENERATION	53
SECOND GENERATION (CHILDREN)	54
THIRD GENERATION (GRANDCHILDREN)	55
FOURTH & FIFTH GENERATIONS (GT AND GT GT GRANDCHILDREN)	59
PART 3: APPENDICES	80
APPENDIX 1: ALBERT JOHN PALMER [#20] OF FOXHILL, NELSON	80
APPENDIX 2: CHARLES HENRY TARR PALMER [#156] OF AUCKLAND	80
APPENDIX 3: CHARLES OSCAR PALMER [#122]) – SUNDRY ITEMS	83
APPENDIX 4: EDMUND “OSCAR” PALMER [#31] INTERVIEWS	89
APPENDIX 5: EDMUND “TED” PALMER [#121] MERE FROM LUKE’S CREEK, KAIKOURA ..	93
APPENDIX 6: EMMA PALMER [#36] OF LEVIN AND KAIKOURA	94
APPENDIX 7: FYFFE PALMER [#122C] KAIKOURA, SAVED LOCAL NATIVE FOREST	94
APPENDIX 8: GEORGE HENRY PALMER [#37], OF WELLINGTON AND AUCKLAND	95
APPENDIX 9: JANE PALMER [#34] MRS W GIBSON OF KAIKOURA	95
APPENDIX 10A: JOHN PALMER [#11] OF WAIMEA WEST BY ROGER NUTTALL (#111B) ..	96
APPENDIX 10B: THE ENIGMA OF JOHN PALMER BY MARY SKIPWORTH	99
APPENDIX 11: LEONARD “RUSSELL” PALMER, [#114] EDITOR NELSON MAIL	112
APPENDIX 12: MELVILLE ASHLEY PALMER [#120] OF WAIMEA WEST	112
APPENDIX 13: PAT PALMER [#122H] “WHERE IS THE ADZE?”	113
APPENDIX 14: ROBERT GEORGE PALMER [#41], SON OF GEORGE AND ROSANNA	116
APPENDIX 15: LYFORD PALMER [#121B] LAUNCHING THE KAIKOURA, 1958	117
APPENDIX 16: MEMORIES OF GODFREY PALMER, SON OF LYFORD AND EILEEN [#121B] ..	118
AFTERWORD: THE MYSTERY OF THE MOA	119
SOURCES AND NOTES	130
INDEX OF PERSONAL NAMES	135

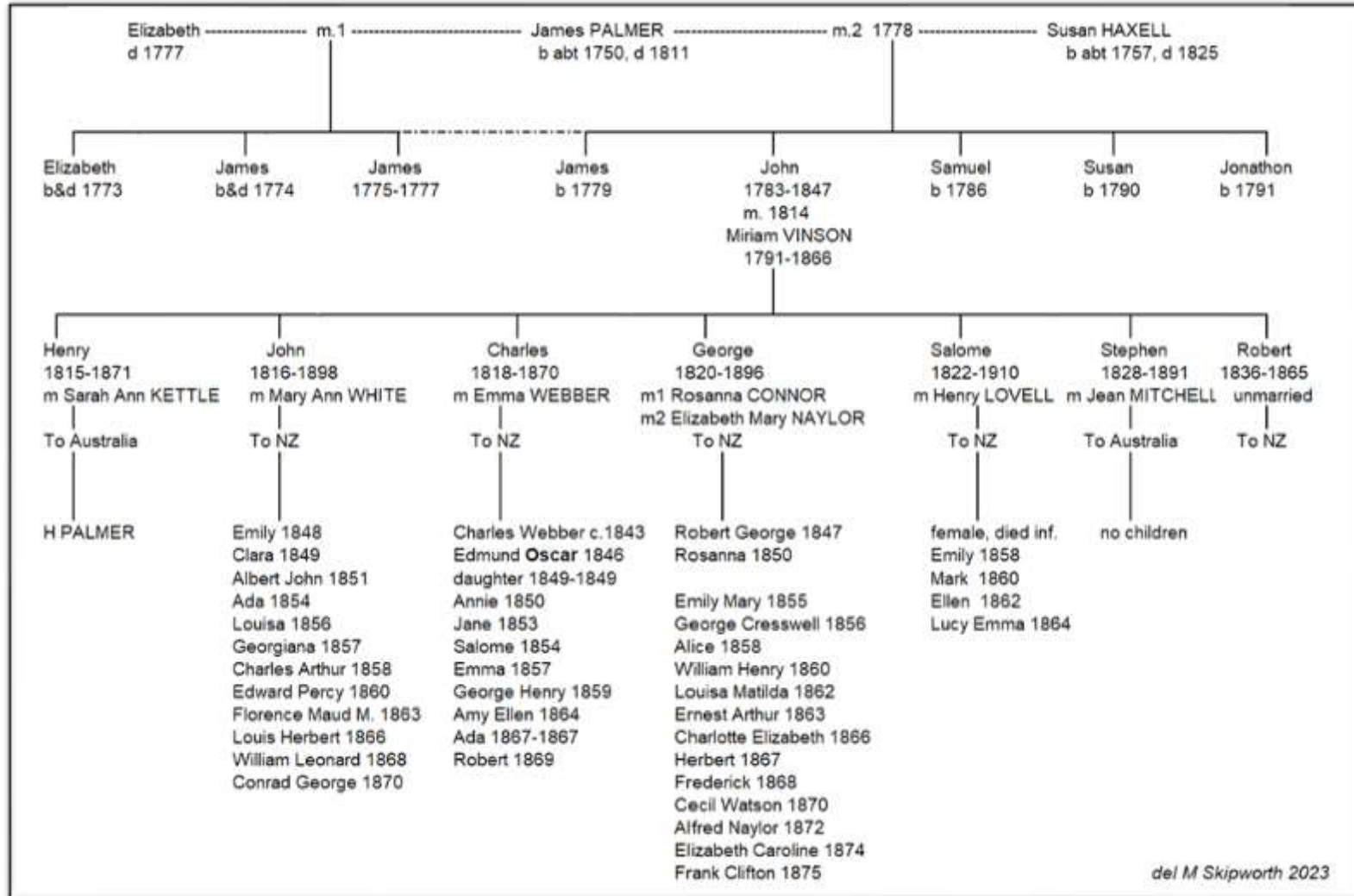


Key:

- | | |
|--|--|
| A Brentwood | N Roman Catholic Convent School |
| B Edmund Sutherland Palmer's second farm | O Suburban Presbyterian Church |
| C Charles Oscar Palmer's farm | P Roman Catholic Church |
| D William Palmer's farm | Q Thomas and Alice Gill's farm |
| E Charles Palmer's farm 1864 - 1868 | R Fyffe's Kahutera Homestead - Robt Palmer died here |
| F Dairy Factory | S Suburban Store |
| G Blacksmith | T Suburban School |
| H Suburban Hall | U Fyffe's House |
| I Inglis's House | V Salome Wayland's House |
| J St James Anglican Church | W Weeping Willows planted by E S Palmer |
| K Alexander Palmer's farm | X Kohanga, Home and Farm of E O Palmer |
| L Glenburn Palmer's farm | Z Site where E S Palmer found Famous Mere |
| M Charles Palmer's First Home and Flour Mill | Route described by E O Palmer |

Not labelled: Mt Fyffe Road, running almost vertically from Ludstone Road at the bottom to Brentwood (A) at top.

CHART: PALMERS OF BRAMFORD, SUFFOLK



PART 1: PALMER FAMILY STORY

In Part 1 the focus is on Charles, the third son of John and Miriam Palmer, and his wife and children, with only a little about his siblings. In Part 2, the Family Register, and Part 3, the Appendices, coverage is broadened to include all seven of John and Miriam's children, but with less detail.

I am dedicating this work to two special cousins, both of whom lost their lives in cruel accidents. I refer to my husband, **John Skipworth** 1934 – 2000 who produced the map on page 4, and **Godfrey Palmer** 1936 – 1980, in his time the senior lineal descendant of Charles Palmer and with whom he shared a deep interest in the Navy and the sea (pages 22 & 118). John and Godfrey developed a close friendship in their youth through holidays spent together in the Marlborough Sounds and were each to the other the brother they had never had. John was honoured to serve as a groomsman at Godfrey's wedding.



FAITH PALMER #121c, AGED ABOUT 13

INTRODUCTION [MARY SKIPWORTH]

In the 1960s, recently married to John, son of Ivan Skipworth and his wife Faith (Fay) Palmer, I was finding it difficult to keep track of all the new relatives. Some of them had fascinating stories, but I was having trouble remembering how the different parts of the family tapestry fitted together.

About this time Ivan retired and was planning a "Big O.E." for himself and Fay. They would be away for a year. Among other preparations, he was collecting family history questions that might require visits to ancestral birthplaces and regional archives in Britain. I encouraged him in this, as I wanted to learn more about my newly acquired family to build a framework where I could attach names of people I might meet or stories I might hear.

A collaboration developed, in which I learned to locate records which would tell us more about the families, but the voice behind the writing was always Ivan's. Even after half a century I am reluctant to interfere with what he had to say. He was a well-educated (B.A., B.Sc.), widely read man, who could bring valuable insight to the situations he was writing about. Occasionally, the availability of further sources has proved him wrong, and at such points I will come in and add the necessary explanations, but much of what he wrote can stand unchallenged.

One essential change I am making now is to set aside most of Ivan's discussions of other related families. This record concerns the Palmers. Separate documents are available about Gills, Lyfords, Coopers, Richardsons and Morrisons.

Another change I have made is to adhere to the widely accepted genealogical convention of not including detail about living persons. There was no Privacy Act in Ivan Skipworth's time, and he would argue, I am sure, that there is no need to be as restrictive as modern practice dictates. And I would agree with him. The legislation does not preclude writing about living people without their express permission. Look at the Biography section in any library if that surprises you. However, families do have some unfortunate incidents from the past that it is kinder not to shout about in ways which might unfairly impact the lives of innocent parties. Their stories will be told, but perhaps not immediately.

The task which Ivan initially set himself was to document the life of Charles Palmer (1818-1870) and his immediate family. Over the years a good deal of information has also come to hand about Charles' siblings, six of whom also emigrated to Australia or New Zealand. Consequently, this paper has two main sections, the first being an updated version of Ivan's original account of Charles Palmer, followed by a section where I have recorded his siblings and their descendants, much of it derived from other genealogists, but augmented from public records. Throughout this work, individual reference numbers are used, preceded by a #. They are explained at the beginning of part 2.

This appeared to be the story of a family descended from typical English agricultural labourers who grasped an opportunity to escape from the harsh life of a farm worker in the hope of bettering themselves in the Colonies opening up in faraway Australasia. The decision to emigrate was full of uncertainty – the risks were enormous, but the ultimate outcome must have been beyond the wildest dreams of the emigrants. For one of their descendants would become Prime Minister of his country, others would fill responsible roles in their communities. Some would farm their own land, others would enter the professions. The new country freed them from the expectations of their class and allowed them to achieve according to their potential. The opportunities were there, provided the individual had the will and the ability to take advantage of them, but we should also acknowledge that many continued to fill the essential less skilled roles of their forebears.

All this came much later, however, and not without some early struggles. And in the end we are left with a question – were they really a typical family of agricultural labourers?

I have attempted where possible to add dates and places in the lists of deceased descendants in part 2, so that these Palmers cannot easily be confused with others of similar date and name. I find if good identifying detail is provided there is less likelihood that your people will be “kidnapped” by an unrelated genealogist keen to plug a gap in their tree.

I feel I should remind my readers of the oft-repeated advice: “You do not have to believe everything that you read in print.” In this paper I have often quoted the words of others, but that doesn’t mean I always agree with every detail that they wrote. Sometimes I point out an error if the matter is important and at others I may refrain from comment because I do not wish to interrupt the flow of the narrative, even though I am quite sceptical. Please do not regard everything quoted here as the last word on the subject.

This story draws on a surprising number of nineteenth century sources, which has enabled a good deal of cross checking of the details. It is concerning how many times the inevitable conclusion is that memories have been faulty. It is a warning to us all to question what we read and to try to find independent corroboration, or contradiction, of what we are told.

Whilst I cannot alter the words of others, I have made every effort to be as accurate as possible in my own writing. However, I am happy to receive corrections if errors have slipped through. If this paper has further amendment this will be indicated by the date on the cover sheet.

As with all my writing, I encourage others to rework any of the information presented here into stories of their own. However, if you choose to quote significant passages *verbatim*, please be careful to retain the name of the author with the quotation, whether it be Ivan, or myself. Do not alter what we said, but if you disagree with our conclusions, please point this out and give your reasons. In such ways the pool of knowledge available to all will continue to grow.

At the end I have included the full text of *The Mystery of the Moa* because I was so impressed by the drama of the story-telling and the depth of knowledge displayed, ranging from Maori Mythology to Evolutionary Biology. I feel it could form the basis of a school study ranging from poetry and drama to Maori Language and Natural History.

Finally, I want to acknowledge all the assistance given freely to both Ivan and me, which has enriched the detail of this story. Some of this help is mentioned in the text but there is much more that is simply too diverse to catalogue. My sincere thanks to you all.

Mary Skipworth, Glendowie, Auckland
December 2024

mskip@xtra.co.nz

INTRODUCTION 1975 [IVAN SKIPWORTH]

I married Ena Faith Palmer, known to me as Fay, and within her family as Faith. Her father was Edmund Sutherland Palmer and her mother Edith Alice Gill.* As a result of an article in *The Press* 10 Sept 1940 contributed by A.C.P. a large amount of material on the Palmer family, their arrival in New Zealand and their subsequent history was available to me. The information in the article was given to A.C.P. by Mrs Salome Wayland (#35), nee Palmer, daughter of Charles, when she was 86. I have been able to check some of the details and to add some points of further interest. [* Edie's birth was registered "Alice", and her marriage as "Alice Edith", but in later life she preferred "Edith Alice".]

The writer would be A.C. Perrin. The chart on page 5 includes Amy Ellen Palmer, fifth daughter of Charles and Emma, who married Alfred Perrin, a journalist, and I think he or his son was the contributor.¹

Salome Wayland was born in Nelson in 1854. She knew her grandmother Miriam Palmer (born about 1791), her uncles, aunts, and parents, all born in England and destined to become pioneer settlers in Nelson and Kaikoura. She was 11 when her father moved to Kaikoura. Her story, given at the age of 86, is a pretty accurate account of her family, the detail often concerning events which happened over 100 years earlier. There are some errors.

SALOME WAYLAND [#35] - INTERVIEW

CHARLES PALMER

—◆—
Sailor and Settler

CAREER OF ADVENTURE RECALLED

(SPECIALLY WRITTEN FOR THE PRESS.)
[By A.C.P.]

Because his parents wanted him to become apprenticed to a linen draper in England more than 100 years ago, a young Englishman, Charles Palmer, ran away from his home in Suffolk and went to sea, there to begin an adventurous life in all parts of the world. He took an active part in the engagements fought in the Mediterranean by the British Fleet during the Greek revolt, and those arising from hostilities between the Egyptians and the Turks. Later he became one of the early bands of pioneers who took up land under settlement schemes in the Nelson district.

His daughter, the last surviving member of the original family, Mrs Salome Wayland of Kaikoura, who celebrated her eighty-sixth birthday last month can recall many of the incidents told to her as a child by her father.

When he left his home Charles Palmer was between 12 and 14 years of age. He immediately joined the Navy, his first position being as a "powder monkey" on *H.M.S. Powerful* then one of the units of the British Fleet in the Mediterranean under the command of Admiral Sir Charles Napier. Later, young Palmer was in charge of a gun, and it was during the siege of Acre, a seaport in Syria, that he was badly wounded in the leg. The doctors wanted to amputate the limb, but he would not allow them to do so. Being unfit for further service in the Navy, he accepted his discharge after being awarded the Turkish Star and a Service medal.

Trading Across the Tasman

He later became a supercargo on a vessel trading to various parts of the Mediterranean, and on his return to England became associated with Captain Liardet, who took a brief but active part in the early settlement of the Taranaki Province. Palmer eventually arrived in New Plymouth to assist in carrying out the survey of the land on behalf of the company anxious to open up settlement. In the course of this work, during which there was constant trouble

with the Maoris, Captain Liardet met with a serious injury which resulted in his resignation from office. Young Palmer accompanied the captain back to Sydney, and while the latter was recuperating from his illness he joined his older brother, Henry Palmer, and together they made several trips between Sydney and North Island ports, bringing cattle across the Tasman and taking back flax. Henry Palmer, being the sole owner of his ship, had for several years been profitably trading between Sydney and the Pacific Islands, and the extension of his sphere of operations to the Dominion added considerably to his wealth.

While spending a period of leave in Sydney between voyages across the Tasman, Charles Palmer met his future wife, a Miss Emma Webber, who was governess to the two children of a Mr and Mrs Gregory who had come out from England via Rio de Janeiro. While in Sydney Mr Gregory died and later his widow married Captain Liardet. Shortly afterwards they left for England accompanied by Miss Webber and Charles Palmer. On October 18, 1842, they were married at St Mary Abbot, the parish church of Kensington, London, and shortly afterwards they took passage accompanied by Charles' brother, John (on either the *Whitby* or the *Will Watch* - probably the latter), arriving in Nelson a few months later and taking up land under the settlement scheme, Charles at Appleby and John at Waimea West.

Farming In New Zealand

Not long after the two brothers had become established their mother, along with her youngest son, Robert, came out to Nelson. Robert eventually made his way to Kaikoura, probably about 1858, and, while digging some ground for the foundation of a house, unearthed the first and most perfect moa's egg found in New Zealand. It is now to be seen in the famous Kensington Museum. In 1859 Robert was in charge of the first flock of sheep to be run in the Clarence Valley.

Because of the constant flooding of his farm at Appleby (Nelson), Charles Palmer in 1864 decided to transfer his belongings and his family to Kaikoura, and, for this purpose, chartered the small sailing vessel *Elizabeth*. The transfer of his stock was a more perplexing problem, but eventually this was solved by a decision that the two eldest sons, Charles and Oscar, should drive these animals overland to Kaikoura. Such a journey was a much more formidable undertaking than in these modern days, but it was successfully accomplished, though not without incident and difficulty.²

When the *Elizabeth* arrived off the Kaikoura coast, she was piloted into the landing place by whaleboats from George Fyffe's whaling station. Planks were laid from the ship to the rocks and the members of the family walked ashore. They were then taken by bullock dray to Charleston's accommodation house, which consisted of two mud whares situated on the site where the Adelphi Hotel now stands.

Charles Palmer purchased a section at Mount Fyffe, where the family lived and carried on farming pursuits until the flood of 1868 brought Luke's Creek and the Waimangaroa stream across the property and caused much damage. He then decided to move to his other farm about a mile further up the mountain slope, and well away from the effects of any floodwaters. Charles Palmer carried on his farming activities there until he died at the comparatively early age of 52 years, the farm being carried on by his son Oscar, who incidentally was one of the first members of the Kaikoura County Council.

Many Descendants

Descendants of Charles and Emma Palmer are now scattered over the Dominion, extending from Auckland in the north to Invercargill in the south, and they number no fewer than 176 of whom 49 are great-great-grandchildren.

During the recent Dominion celebrations Mrs Wayland received the Centennial Medal and was the recipient of many congratulatory messages. She has lived continuously in the Kaikoura district since her parents took up residence there more than 76 years ago, and she has taken a keen interest in the welfare of the district. Her father was a prominent member of the first Road Board established in Kaikoura, and his period of public service was in later years carried on by one of his sons, Oscar.

The majority of Charles Palmer's family married and settled down in the Kaikoura district, and many of their descendants today still farm areas developed in the earlier days. Charles Palmer's mother, Miriam Palmer, also resided in the district until her death. Details of her family are as follows:

Henry (lived in Sydney), John (Waimea West), Salome (Nelson, married Lovel, Nelson), Charles (Nelson and Kaikoura), George (Sydney and later New Zealand), Stephen (Australia), Robert (Nelson and Kaikoura; died in Kaikoura).

Charles and Emma Palmer's family comprised four sons and five daughters: Charles (Kaikoura, bachelor), Oscar (Kaikoura, married Elizabeth Morrison), Annie (Kaikoura, married Charles Evans), Jane (Kaikoura, married William Gibson), Salome (Kaikoura married P. F. Wayland), Emma (Levin and Kaikoura, spinster), George (Auckland, married Emma Tarr), Amy Ellen (Wellington, married Alfred Perrin), Robert (Kaikoura, died in New South Wales [Press, 10 Sep 1940, p.10]³

BRAMFORD VILLAGE, SUFFOLK [IVAN]

In the *Press* article Mrs Wayland refers to Suffolk as their home area in England. In his diary (more later, page 26) Robert Palmer states: 'when i was lonely in the long winter days i used to think of old bramford.' Bramford would then have been a small village just north of Ipswich (now on the A45). Marian Palmer⁴ of *The Gables*, Waimea West, Nelson, told me they came from Ipswich. This fixes their birthplace, Bramford, on the river Gipping, near the sea, so the boys would have had every opportunity of becoming familiar with ships and the sea. A rail station opened in 1846, connecting Bramford to London by the Ipswich and Bury Railway.⁴⁴



STREET SCENE IN BRAMFORD, A SHORT DISTANCE FROM THE CHURCH

To confirm this I wrote to Ian Palmer,⁵ great, great grandson of Charles Palmer, then resident in London, and asked him to visit Ipswich and Bramford to search for Palmers. This he did and found Bramford completely rebuilt with none of the village atmosphere remaining.

He inspected the registers of the Parish Church of Bramford in the county of Suffolk and found them "full of Palmers from 1750 onwards." He forwarded a list from which I have been able to take the family record back to 1750. Charles Palmer's parents were John and Miriam Palmer, but Miriam's birth surname was not found. Her marriage to John Palmer was probably recorded in a nearby parish. The dates of baptism, and in most cases the dates of birth, of their children were in the baptism register and I have recorded these on the Palmer family chart, page 5.



PARISH CHURCH OF ST MARY, BRAMFORD, SUFFOLK

These are the details extracted from Bramford registers by Ian Palmer:⁶

John Palmer's parents were James and Susan Palmer. James was born in 1750 and about 1772 he married his first wife, Elizabeth. Childbearing was a hazardous undertaking and infant mortality high as the following records show:

To James and Elizabeth Palmer were born:

Elizabeth	baptised 4 March 1773	buried 17 March 1773
James	baptised 7 Aug 1774	buried 10 Aug 1774
James	baptised 19 July 1775	buried 3 July 1777

Elizabeth, the mother, died and was buried 18 March 1777.

James, now a widower aged 28, married Susan Haxell, age 21, on 29 Sept 1778.

To James and Susan were born:

James	baptised 5 Sept 1779	Susan	baptised 7 March 1790
John *	baptised 18 April 1783	Jonathon	baptised 23 Oct 1791
Samuel	baptised 3 Apr 1786		

* John married Miriam Vinson, and their children emigrated to Australia and New Zealand. John died in 1847 and a few years later Miriam and her youngest son Robert left England.

JOHN PALMER [#6] OF BRAMFORD, CHARLES' FATHER [MARY]

Our knowledge of John Palmer's whole life could be summed up by two words: "labourer" and "Bramford." He was christened and buried in Bramford, and his parents were married there (page 54). There were many other Palmers listed in the registers of that time who were probably close relatives. A village like Bramford would have struggled to supply sufficient employment opportunities for all of them, particularly in times of economic depression.

John and Miriam's children demonstrated a willingness to take on the risks and the challenges of emigration for the possibility of creating a better life for their families.

Roger Nuttall has written: "Adrienne Simpson describes Elizabeth's husband, George, as a 'farmer's son'⁷, though the registers always record John as 'labourer'. This causes me to reflect on the combined talents of these Palmer brothers. They showed abilities which might not be expected from labourer's sons, requiring a reinvestigation of John Palmer (their father's) life. We only have the story from Miriam's letter (page 14), of his death falling off a farm cart, and his widow's complaint about how hard he was expected to work in the fields. It is difficult to envisage how a 'farmer' could end up in this situation."

In this context, "farmer" described a farm owner or lease holder. A farmer may have supervised or even worked with his labourers in the fields, or he may have employed sufficient staff to free himself entirely from field labour. "Farmer's son" sometimes described the occupation of sons who replaced labourers on a particular property. The eldest could expect to inherit the farm and stock on his father's death or retirement. If the enterprise was profitable, additional land might purchase where a second son could live independently. The options for younger sons in a large family were either to give up the idea of marrying and remain in the parental home, or to move away and work for wages, thus effectively becoming a labourer rather than a "farmer's son". Sometimes a younger son would marry a girl who had no brothers and inherit her father's farm in due course.

Our John could be an example of someone forced to slip down the socio-economic scale. A labourer was not usually able to apprentice his third son, yet that is what Charles is reported to be running away from (page 9). The vicar may have arranged an apprenticeship for a promising child, and his recommendation may have given John junior his start as a servant to the gentry. John's children were literate, before the introduction of compulsory education, and his wife Miriam could write a long letter (page 14). Later, Charles would marry a governess (page 10), and George would marry the vicar's daughter (page 57). His sister Salome would be criticised for marrying "beneath her station" (page 24).

MIRIAM PALMER [#6] CHARLES' MOTHER [MARY]

In the 1970s the identification of Miriam's birth family had been frustrating Palmer genealogists.

- It had been suggested that she came from "Brentwood near Bury St Edmunds". However, Brentwood, in Essex, is not close to Bury St Edmunds, in Suffolk.
- Salome (Palmer) LOVELL's NZ death certificate records her mother as Miriam DINSON.
- FamilySearch lists the marriage of John Palmer and Miriam VINSON on 14 Feb 1814 at St Matthews, Ipswich, Suffolk,⁸ and this is accepted as the date fits well with the birth of their first known child Henry in 1815. Ipswich was the nearby market town for Bramford.

- Surname dictionaries suggest Vinson and Vincent come from the same Norman source.
- Ivan concluded that Miriam never lived in or even visited Kaikoura, making it less likely that the name *Brentwood* for the Kaikoura farm came from her family.

If only we could ask Miriam where she was born, and that is what the 1851 census did. She answered Bramford. But did she really know where she lived as a very young child? This was not information anyone would have expected to be asked for half a century later. The recorded answer may only indicate that Miriam had no knowledge of having lived elsewhere.

1851 census for Miriam Palmer⁹

Head	Miriam Palmer	Widow	59	Laundress	Suffolk	Bramford
Visitor	Mary Smith	Married	63	Formerly Schoolmistress	Suffolk	Bramford
Grandson	Robert Palmer	3			Middlesex	Stepney
Granddaughter	Roseanna Palmer	1			Suffolk	Bramford

Address: The Road, Bramford

Miriam Palmer, Head, widow, age 59, laundress, born Suffolk, Bramford, as were the family next door, hence the dittos.

Mary Smith, visitor, married, age 63, formerly schoolmistress, born Suffolk, Bramford

Robert Palmer, grandson, age 3, born Middlesex, Stepney

Roseanna Palmer, granddaur, age 1, born Suffolk, Bramford.

There the matter might have rested, had Roger Nuttall and others not decided to make a determined effort to find an answer by analysing the entries in the IGI, the LDS church's first digital index of genealogical records. Further findings:

- Marriage of John Palmer and Miriam Vinson at Ipswich 14 Feb 1814 (from parish register).
- No birth record found for a Miriam VINSON in Suffolk, no Vinson records in Bramford.
- Searching all VINSONs in Suffolk they found a record of the above Ipswich marriage listed as Mariam, not Miriam VINSON. The IGI treated Mariam as a variant of Mary.
- A possible birth record was found recently in Earl Stonham parish register: Mary VINSON, baptised 24 March 1791.⁸ Earl Stonham, Suffolk, is “near Bury St Edmunds”, and not too far from Bramford, which seemed a good fit. However, this turned out to be a **false lead**, as that Mary Vinson or Vincent married Philip Gully, a soldier from Somerset. Mary, wife of Philip Gully, born Stoneham, Suffolk is listed in the 1851 Somerset census return. The Vincent name was perpetuated among their Gully descendants in New Zealand.

MIRIAM PALMER'S 1847 LETTER TO SALOME [MARY]

The following letter to Salome Palmer (#14, later Mrs Lovell) in New Zealand, from her mother Miriam, was written in Bramford, in November 1847.⁴¹

Although living in an old shed in very poor conditions, we find that Miriam's level of literacy enabled her to write quite a complex and detailed account as, with 4 children already in the Antipodes, she contemplated the possible emigration of the remainder of her family. Notes in square brackets have been added by Roger Nuttall.

Ivan missed seeing a copy of this letter, although he was aware of its existence from having visited Marian Palmer at *The Gables*. Marian indicated that she had papers “upstairs”, but she was by that time too infirm to show them to casual visitors.

My Dear Salome

The evenings being very long and am so much alone i thought i would amuse myself by beginning a few lines to you 5 years have now passed away since you undertook that long journey it may not seem long to you, but it does to me i hope you received my letter that i sent of in September there was a ship to sail the 20 of that Month [Miriam cannot be sure that Salome has received the bad news of her father's death.] no doubt you feel shocked at hearing of poor fathers death how swift he was snatched from time into eternity he was at his work between four and five o'clock in the afternoon of the 25 of August and was stretched on the bed a corpse before seven what an Awful change in such a short time. Poor sould he was put to unload some dew rakings of barley at Mumfords stock yard and was going down the lane with one horse and the empty waggon to set it in the Lodge at Papermill farm and a cart load of deal coming out of a field the horse took fright and ran of as he was on the shaft it is supposed and was in the act of getting onto the horses back and it kicked and chucked him off and the wheels passed over him and his poor back was intirely broken into two Doctor Mumford examined him after he was dead [Small details at this point occurred to her. The Club referred to was probably insurance against burial so she would have to meet all the expenses] his watch was crushed it cost 7s shillings to repair it and he had new pair of highlows as they are called brought home only the night before and paid half a sovereign for them and the club he was in was broken up last Spring so tis all the worse for me [Anger begins to surge concerning Mumford. Burning indignation for the way he has been treated by the Squire] but thank God I have that consolation that there is not doubt but he is arrived at that Blessed city where the Wicked cease from troubling and the Weary are at Rest and the Servant is free from his Master it was but a few days before as they were plowing a piece of land three or four of them had to plow in the same furrow one before the other and Mumford was looking on and poor father did but slacken his pace to shift something in the plow and Mumford called out to the hinder one Plow over that old man and Poor soul how he threatened he would tell him of it and ask him what he ment by saying so but the Lord will settle all such accounts he will be an old man if he live long enough but tis not worth while to dwell upon it [She claims two consolations - he was nearly 65 and she also speaks of the ways of Providence] when you receive this it will be long since but if the Lord had spared him a few years his time would have been but Labour and Sorrow he was in his 65 year i had often thought when he had gone to work of a morning that he was so sadly he would have to be brought home but what Providence have decreed for us we cannot get out of the way of [Stephen's premonition of danger and his anxiety to get home from Russia and Prussia. Ipswich is a seaport town trading into the North Sea and through that into the Baltic. Stephen is 19.] Stephen came home about 8 in the morning of the Awful day and Poor Soul he came in about 9 for a few minnits and was glad to find he was home but did not see him any more Stephen said he never felt so anxious to get home before in his life he is now tired of the sea this Voyage have sickened him he have been 2 voyages to Rusia and Prusia [Stephen works for retired clergyman, George Naylor, earning 9 shillings a week] but he is now out door servant to an old man at the house where Mrs Collins did live He is a retired clergyman [Note reference to Hannah Crooks and brother John Palmer as Steward at Stoke Hall. Stoke is a suburb of Ipswich.] and only one servant her name is Hannah Crooks she did live at Stoke Hall with Brother John when steward was there Steven work in the garden and have a horse and gig to see to the old man is quite an old fashion one and a very Misserable one but Stephen get nine shillings a week of him at present [Robert appears in the narrative] and Robert is slushing about the fields with Mumford's sheep for 2 shillings a week [Miriam describes the primitive conditions under which she maintains a home for Stephen and Robert] i hope he will soon meet with a light place so we are all living in the old hut at present but the washing go hard with me but i must try to keep a home for them as long as i can [The other alternative is to go and live with George in London.] but George would have

me go to live in London and if i had only myself i shouldnt mind for his wife is a nice little cleaver woman and we might do very well together no doubt for she is a capital hand at ironing for the Laundreys before she married she went out 5 days in the week half a crown a day in winter and 3s in summer but now she take it home to iron at her own house she have many times ironed 60 shirts a day and did it last winter but now she have a dear little boy and how she manage i dont know but when she went from here she took my old stove home with her as i did not use it she only started at our station half past 4 and was at London half past 7 and that stove and a deal more luggage for five shillings and elevenpence by railway we see trains on this line that reach a quarter of a mile drawn by one engine only

Dear Salome i received a letter from you the 29 of September dated March 7 giving the account of John being married you told me his wifes name but did not say if she was from England i hope he is comfortable and Charles also give my kind love to them all and may they and yourself be preserved from such troubles and sorrow as i have met with is the prayer of your poor unhappy mother but a little while and the worlds frowns and smiles will be all buried together

[The following written in blood and hard to read]

[A break of a week - bad news - George is out of work, the London family face a crisis] November 21st Dear Salome as my nose set of bleeding I make use of it for ink a few words and must tell you that i have just heard from George and he is out of employ again owing to the stopage in the railway works There is not less than a hundred and thirty thousand men out of employ in England from the stopage of the railway works alone and numbers of large merchants in London are failed and bankers also that had shares in the railways the Mr Barclays that were emensely rich are failed by means of the same and London is full of men out of employ and George say to go to seek for any employment is as bad as going beging he was out last year from August to April and was obliged to make away or at least to Pledge allmost all they possessed and was now getting round but what he will do now i cannot tell but i expect he will be obliged to go to sea if he can get a berth if his wife would consent to emigrate to some other country he would for he say he is sure any where is better than this country 12 months ago he was all hot for going to the Cape but Rose would not consent.

[Another week has gone, another acquaintance has died - Maryann Caitlin]

November 28 (in ink) Poor father was buried this day 13 weeks and the next that was burried here was Maryann Catlin so we go young and old she had not been in good health all the summer but did not leave her service till about a fortnight before her death

[Correspondence problems - Salome has correspondence with Henry in Sydney. Henry's father-in-law Mr Kettle is writing to Miriam, but Henry does not write to Miriam. John writes to Eliza Brown but Mrs Manning and Mr Evans are expecting letters from John. Mr Evans has left Lady Rendlesham's employ.] Dear Salome you say you hear from Henry sometimes i wish you would ask him to write to Sarah's father or brother if he would they will be glad to hear of them for it seems he have left of writing to me so that i can give them no account of him i doubt he is not doing himself any good there but had better have stayed in England i am glad to hear that Eliza Brown have received a letter from John sometime since but Mrs Manning is surprised that John have not written to her she live at 39 Georgen Street Cambden new town if John wish to write but Mr Chew the butler have been dead 12 months Mr Evans have left Lady Rendlesham but there was one maid servant there that was when John was there she told George she had heard Mr Evans express his surprise that John did not write to him according to his promis Dear Salome if i am spared to hear from you again i hope i shall hear you are living nearer to your brothers for when i consider the distance you are from home and then so far from them you seems like an outcast.

CHARLES PALMER [#12] TRAVELS TO NEW ZEALAND [IVAN]

The *Press* article refers to the marriage of Charles Palmer and Emma Webber at St Mary Abbots Church, Kensington, London on 18 Oct 1842. When in London in 1963 I checked the marriage register and the date is correct. Emma Webber's address is given as Orme Square.

Later, they called their Kaikoura home *Brentwood*. Brentwood, Essex, is a few miles N.E. of London, and, having established that Miriam Vinson had no apparent connection to Brentwood, I wondered if it could have been Emma Webber's birthplace? [Mary comments:] This can also be dismissed as Emma's ¹⁰ shows she came from Bath in Somerset.

Almost immediately they sailed for New Zealand. Mrs Wayland states they sailed on the *Whitby* or the *Will Watch*. This is not correct, but I hope that I can account for her confusion on this point. They sailed on the *Phoebe*, 420 tons, Captain Dale, arriving in Nelson 29 Feb 1843. They were cabin passengers and with them came their brother John Palmer and sister Salome Palmer. They travelled in the fore cabin, paying £20 per head passage money.

Another cabin passenger was Donald Sinclair who became a magistrate in the Nelson district. One hundred and eighteen years later our son John Peyton Skipworth married Mary Sinclair Scott, great, great, granddaughter of Donald Sinclair.

The passenger list gives their ages as John 32, Charles 30, Salome 22, Emma 28, but from the death certificates of Charles and Emma, from their headstone in the Kaikoura cemetery, and from church birth registers, their ages were John 26, Charles 24, Salome 20, Emma 18. I cannot account for this discrepancy in ages - the *Phoebe* was the first ship to offer reduced fares. Perhaps age and reduction were related. It is interesting to note that Donald Sinclair's age was reduced from 40 to 28. Passenger lists are not a very accurate source of information.¹¹



Charles and Emma were unusual emigrants in 1843. Charles had been in New Zealand in 1841, returned to England to marry Emma, and sailed to New Zealand for the second time in 1843. Few men had done this by 1843. Emma had been in Australia with the Gregorys before 1842, returned to England, and then after her marriage to Charles, came to New Zealand in 1843. Very few women, had had that experience by 1843.

CHARLES AND EMMA PALMER, KAIKOURA CEMETERY

They are buried in the Kaikoura cemetery, their grave being in the top east corner, with a stone, still in a good state of preservation in 1974, stating "In loving memory of Charles Palmer died June 23rd 1870 aged 52 also his wife Emma died Oct 19th 1876 aged 52. Pioneers."

ITEMS AT TE PAPA [MARY]

In 1954, Marian Palmer of *The Gables*, granddaughter of Charles Palmer's brother John, gave some of their cabin furniture to the Dominion Museum, who list it thus:

*Collection of Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
Gift of the Palmer Family 1954 PF000014.*

A beech-wood framed, cane-panelled, double ended settee, used on the voyage to Nelson by John Palmer in 1842. This is illustrated in Northcote-Bade's book,¹² and is currently [1978] on display in the Museum.

A cabin trunk, cowhide, studded with brass tacks having the initials of John Palmer, and used on the voyage out. The trunk is currently in storage at the Museum.

A pair of moleskin trousers, said to have been worn on the voyage out by one of John Palmer's sons. In storage at the Museum. [* As neither John nor Charles had sons at that time, this statement needs reconsideration.]*

A chandelier, cast and wrought iron, with four branches for fitting oil lamps. In storage at the Museum.

This image was used to promote an exhibition in Nelson, for which the settee was sent from Wellington. The technician is unpacking it from a crate in which it occupied the upper compartment. Geoffrey Palmer describes this settee being "adapted for use as a cabin bed with detachable side pieces to stop the sleeper rolling out of bed."¹³ One such piece is in position here, partly obscured by the technician, and another is to the left, lying on the floor of the crate.



Exhibition technician Douglas Kelaher installs a settee brought to Nelson on the ship *Phoebe* in 1843 by John Palmer, who settled in Waimea West. Manufactured by S.W. Silver & Co., Outfitters, etc, London and Liverpool the settee is on loan to the Museum, for exhibition, from Te Papa. The settee is referenced as: Collection of the Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa Gift of the Palmer Family 1954: PF000014.

JOHN PALMER'S SETTEE IS RETURNED BRIEFLY TO NELSON

“WHITBY OR WILL WATCH” [IVAN]

How did Mrs Wayland think her parents had come to New Zealand in the *Whitby* or *Will Watch*? The answer is to be found in her description of Charles Palmer's association with a Captain Liardet who was appointed the New Zealand Company agent in New Plymouth. He sailed on the *Whitby*, 347 tons, Captain William Lacey, from Gravesend on 27 April 1841 with the preliminary expedition for establishing a colony at Nelson, arriving in Wellington on 18 Sept 1841. He arrived in New Plymouth on the *Regina* on Oct 18 to take over from Captain King. The passenger list of the *Whitby* included a William Palmer, servant, aged 19, with the remark “recommended by Capt Liardet”.

Liardet did not last long in New Plymouth. Salome stated he was wounded in an accident. She is quite correct. About 1 Dec 1841 he was endeavouring to fire a cannon salvaged from the wreck of the *Regina*. After some difficulty in igniting the powder it went off accidentally while his face was close to the muzzle. He suffered greatly and it was doubtful if he would retain his eyesight. On 3 March 1842 he, together with a Mr Palmer, sailed for Sydney aboard the brig *Caroline* arriving Sydney on 14 March. Taken in conjunction with Salome's story I think William Palmer and Mr Palmer were in fact Charles Palmer.

CHALES PALMER'S LETTER TO NEW ZEALAND JOURNAL

The above is confirmed in a letter from Charles Palmer to the editor of the *NZ Journal*:¹⁴

London, 12th September 1842

Sir,

Having gone out with the Nelson Expedition last year, and proceeded from Wellington to New Plymouth with Captain Liardet, from whence I have just returned with him, and having experience of six month's residence in the country, I wish to offer a few observations respecting New Zealand.

I had conversation with many settlers at New Plymouth, particularly as regards the land, and their opinion of the capabilities of the place. The general opinion is, that there could be no better soil in any country: it is well watered by the rivers Huatoki, the Enui, and the Waitera. The place is well covered with timber; and just before I left they had discovered coal about four miles inland in some quantity. The beach is covered with a sand in which quantities of iron have been discovered.

The soil is a black vegetable mould, about four feet or from four to six feet deep; generally speaking, the sub-soil is a yellow clay. Gooseberries, among other fruits, grow plentifully; and all kinds of vegetables will grow.

I have brought home a very good sample of wheat, grown about three-quarters of a mile from the shore on the northern side of the town. The soil was merely rooted up, and the seed put in, and the wheat was cut in February last. The Indian corn also thrives very well; indeed, it is finer at New Plymouth than I have seen it in any other part of the world; the natives use a great deal themselves. New Plymouth produces, in my opinion, finer potatoes than anywhere in the Islands of New Zealand. The natives get two crops a year, merely scratching the ground with a stick before planting. Watermelons are in quantity and are eaten also by the natives.

The timber is very fine about three-quarters of a mile from the town and may be floated down the rivers. The red pine is easily worked, and I have seen some furniture, drawers, and chairs made of it; the grain is close, and susceptible of a high polish. The furniture has a handsome appearance; some chairs were made for Mr Cutfield.

The flax is in abundance, and very superior, being almost entirely the tall flax. There are whole fields of it, and it appears finer than what is generally seen.

In the months of December, January, February, and March is beautiful weather; and the roadstead is then perfectly safe. The New Zealand Company have sent out moorings, which were laid down just before we left, and which enable vessels to lie in safety throughout the year.

By inserting these remarks you will oblige your obedient servant,

Charles Palmer

P.S. I have only accompanied Captain Liardet here on account of the accident which befel him; but it is my intention to return in a very short time to New Zealand.

[Comment by Mary] From *Te Ara, the Encyclopedia of New Zealand* “The first local periodical was the *New Zealand Journal*, published by the New Zealand Company from 1840 to 1852. It aimed to promote the company and its settlements but included letters about colonial life.”¹⁵

Whilst the basic substance of Charles Palmer’s letter was true enough, it appears to have been heavily edited to satisfy the Company’s need for favourable publicity. It does not give an accurate picture of Charles’ literacy skills. He may even have been persuaded to supply this testimonial in return for some concession in purchasing cabin passages for 4 adults on the *Phoebe*.

Contrast that letter with the following piece written by Charles in 1869¹⁶ without editorial assistance. Its contents are unimportant to this story, but it is included to demonstrate the contrasting command of spelling and language between these two pieces of writing.

Kikuria [Kaikoura] January 13th/69

To Mr Bryant

Dear Sir

Pleas to see Mr Kingdom About my land And That Mr Pollock or you have got the Receat of it. And if He will be good enuf to Asck Mr Pollock for the same and Convay it to Me Charles Palmer senr and do the Bisniss As they Pleas And I shall be Thankful To them

Pleas to Tell Messes Hoopper And Co About the Mill

Pleas ask Mr Pollock About the money As I am Badley in want of some to Get Afew things for my Family having lost somany Cattle it has Put me sadly Back

Dear sir, you will greatly oblige C P

TIMELINE: CHARLES PALMER [#12] - FIRST VISIT TO NEW ZEALAND [MARY]

27.4.1841 sailed on *Whitby* from Gravesend, England for Wellington, NZ as servant to Liardet, listed as “William” Palmer. Because of his employment as Liardet’s servant, he would not have been free to make side trips (to Nelson, or Sydney) as has been suggested.

18.9.1841 disembarked at Wellington, as *Whitby* was proceeding to Nelson

18.10.1841 sailed for New Plymouth with Liardet on the *Regina*. *Regina* partially wrecked

1.12.1841 Liardet severely injured, especially his eyes, by exploding cannon from *Regina*

30.3.1842 as result of injury - Liardet and Palmer departed for Sydney on the *Caroline*

1842 in Sydney, Liardet proposes marriage to recently widowed Mrs Gregory

1842 Charles Palmer proposes marriage to Emma Webber, the Gregory children’s governess

9.4.1842 Gregory household, Liardet and Palmer depart Sydney in *William Jardine* for London
7.9.1842 arrival of Mrs Gregory and Captain Liardet announced in London papers
12.9.1842 publication of Charles Palmer's letter to NZ Journal
11.10.1842 marriage of Caroline Anne Gregory to Francis Liardet at Paddington, London
18.10.1842 marriage of Charles Palmer to Emma Webber at Kensington, London
9.11.1842 Charles addressed a public meeting at Bath on behalf of the NZ Company
16.11.1842 Charles & Emma Palmer, John Palmer, and Salome Palmer sail to NZ on *Phoebe*.
[Dates from newspaper databases from Wellington, Sydney and London]

During Charles's 2 month period in England emigration plans for his sister Salome and brother John were arranged and passages secured on the *Phoebe*. [In case the reader is confused, Salome Palmer, later Mrs Salome (Palmer) LOVELL (1822-1910), was the aunt of Salome (Palmer) WAYLAND (1854-1942) who was interviewed for the *Press* article.]

[Ivan resumes:]

I think Charles was originally bound for Nelson as a settler, but his association with Liardet took him to New Plymouth, thence to Sydney where apparently he fell in love, returned to England to be married and then carried out his 'intention to return in a very short time to New Zealand.'

Liardet's opinion of New Plymouth was stated in one of his reports: 'One might just as well live on a solitary rock in the middle of the ocean.'¹⁷

No doubt Salome as a small girl had heard stories of this adventurous period in her father's life and associated his arrival in New Zealand with the *Whitby* or the *Will Watch*. She was correct when she stated that her father Charles first came to New Zealand on the *Whitby* or the *Will Watch*, but Charles and his wife Emma certainly came to New Zealand on the *Phoebe*. It is strange Salome did not mention the *Phoebe*.

SIR CHARLES NAPIER AND *H.M.S. POWERFUL* [IVAN]

In her story Salome associates Charles Palmer with naval service in the Mediterranean under the flag of Sir Charles Napier on *H.M.S. Powerful*, the siege of Acre, the Greek revolt. All this is probably correct. Napier had had a colourful career, financially ruined by 1827 and dismissed, he was brought back into service and appointed to the *Galatea*. While cruising in the Azores area he decided to support the Queen of Portugal against Don Miguel - and was again struck off the Navy list. He continued to give his services to the Queen who made him a grand commander of the Order of the Tower and Sword. My great grandfather, John Henry Skipworth, had also fought in Portugal on the Queen's side and he also was rewarded with the Order of the Tower and Sword, the badge of the order still being in my possession.¹⁸

On Napier's return to England, he was appointed second in command of the Mediterranean fleet and in 1838 hoisted his flag in *H.M.S. Powerful*. He led the storming column at Sidon on 26 Sept 1840 and on 4 Nov 1840 bombarded Acre. Salome's story of Charles Palmer at this stage of his career fits fairly well into actual history. From the above dates Charles had to move quickly, heal a wound, return to England, be discharged and be ready to sail with Liardet for New Zealand in April 1841.

[Mary's comment:]

I think Ivan may have given us a glimpse of his scepticism when he wrote "Charles had to move fairly quickly . . ." Salome's education at the Suburban North school, Kaikoura would not have encompassed British Naval History to the level evident in this article. She would have done well if she remembered her father identifying the ship as *Powerful*. I don't believe the finer details came from the interview with Salome, but from her journalist nephew A C Perrin who thought the story needed more detail and excitement and had encyclopaedias available to assist him. And a threatened amputation of the leg ? It is strange that no permanent disability following such a horrendous wound was ever mentioned.

[Ivan continues:]

Charles Palmer had a long association with the sea. His great grandson **Lyford Palmer** #121b also had an intense interest in the sea and owned various launches including the twin engine 38ft *Makora*. He later built for himself a magnificent 36 ft launch and named it *Kaikoura* (Appendix 15 page **117**). It was launched in 1958 and is still [1975] based on Plimmerton, operating as a charter vessel.¹⁹ He made many crossings between Wellington and Picton and many less capable boat owners were pleased to have him take their launches across the Strait. Lyford's son **Godfrey Palmer** (Appendix 16, page **118**) has also been keenly interested in the sea and boats. He served in the Naval Volunteer Reserve from 1954 to 1971 when he retired with the rank of Chief Petty Officer. In 1968, when the *Wahine* foundered in Wellington Harbour, Godfrey was out with the armada of small boats rescuing survivors from the stricken vessel.

George, third son of Charles and Emma Palmer married Emma Tarr and to them was born Charles Henry Tarr Palmer. While I have been completing this story he died in Auckland aged 91. Throughout his life he was associated with yachting and naval affairs. He was on active service with the navy in British waters in World War I. After the war he was associated with the formation of the N.Z. Naval Volunteer Reserve, retiring in 1932 with the rank of Commander. For his services he was awarded an O.B.E. and the French Government bestowed on him the Cross of a Chevalier of the Legion of Honour. When he heard that Godfrey Palmer held Charles Palmer's sword he was anxious to obtain it from him, but Godfrey Palmer as senior male line descendant of Charles Palmer rightfully retained possession of the sword.

In his autobiographical notes (appendix 2, page **80**) C.H.T. Palmer does not mention his father, his father's birthplace Nelson, or Kaikoura and his many relations there. His father left Kaikoura as a young man and probably lost contact with his relatives in the South Island. He makes only passing mention of his grandfather Charles as "a sailor in the Royal Navy".

CHARLES PALMER'S SWORD [MARY]

Ivan, in discussing Charles Palmer's sword, may have given us a clearer glimpse of Charles' employment on *H.M.S. Powerful*. The Wikipedia article on "Powder Monkey" describes a boy about 12 years old, chosen for his small size and nimbleness, and employed with little training to bring up small packets of gunpowder from storage in the hold to supply the needs of the gunners without exposing the ship to the risk of a large amount of gunpowder being accidentally exploded on deck. By the time of his service on *Powerful* in 1838-1840 Charles Palmer would have been aged 20-22. He had had 10 years maritime experience, and it appears that he had been promoted from powder monkey to an officer cadet, the sort who could "take charge of a

gun”, “earn a medal” and “wear a sword” – all comments which have been used in relation to Charles.

Further information about Charles Palmer’s service in the Royal Navy is likely to be available from UK National Archives at Kew, but I leave that to another researcher to pursue. Knowing the name of the ship, *H.M.S. Powerful*, its captain (Liardet, under Sir Charles Napier), and a date (e.g. Bombardment of Acre, November 1840), should be the keys to identifying the correct set of records. One of the notes I have suggests *H.M.S. Cleopatra* as another ship on which Palmer served. Liardet was promoted to Commander on *Cleopatra* in the mid-1830s, and it may be that Palmer was already associated with Liardet at this date (or it could be that the author of my note confused their sources about these two men). I mention *Cleopatra* only to alert anyone looking for service records to check both ships. Further clues as to dates and ships may be available from the inscriptions on Charles’s sword and/or medal.

CHARLES PALMER AND THE NEW ZEALAND COMPANY [IVAN AND MARY]

The previous discussion proposes that Charles Palmer’s first visit to New Zealand was as the servant of Captain Liardet, who had been appointed the NZ Company’s Agent for the New Plymouth settlement. As such, Palmer would have been funded either directly by the NZ Company or by Liardet himself.

Palmer’s letter to the *NZ Journal* (19), painting what some might consider an excessively positive picture of the New Plymouth settlement in 1841, has also been noted. The letter appears to have been prepared in consultation with his Company bosses.

Andrew Matheson’s book²⁰, draws attention to another item on the same topic which appeared in the *NZ Journal* (UK) 26 November 1842, “Report of a Meeting at the Castle and Ball Inn, Bath, on 9 November 1842.” Charles Palmer had appeared in person, speaking in greater detail about the matters covered in his published letter and “answering questions put to him by various gentlemen present, as to the conduct of the natives, the expense of clearing, and the productiveness of the soil, as well as the healthfulness of the climate, to all of which the most satisfactory answers were elicited: that the natives were on most friendly terms with the settlers, raising large supplies of potatoes etc. for them, and that the expense of clearing timber land was valued at 8 pounds an acre, and fern land at 2 pounds. He had scattered wheat on the ground, which, without having any care bestowed upon it, had flourished surprisingly.”

Why would Charles Palmer have been available to speak to this meeting in Bath? As discussed in note 10 page 130, Bath was the new Mrs Palmer’s birthplace. A visit would provide an opportunity for Emma to introduce her husband to her family and make her farewells. If the NZ Company offered a speaker’s fee, they had good reason to visit Bath. The railway from London to Bath having recently replaced stagecoaches, they would have had easier and faster access.

Charles Heaphy, whose painting of Nelson Haven in 1841 introduces this paper, was also employed by the New Zealand Company to encourage emigration. A disappointed Nelson settler, William Hodgson, called Heaphy “that mendacious vagabond”²¹ on account of his idealised representations of the land which emigrants were being enticed to purchase.

Returning to the *Phoebe*:

*The surgeon on the Phoebe was Dr Greenwood. He was aided by an assistant selected from the passengers, it being important to choose a man of responsible character and some education for the assistant to the surgeon had to be schoolmaster also. Dr Greenwood considered that his assistant, Charles Palmer, had by his firmness and tact very much contributed to the order, regularity and harmony which prevailed amongst the passengers.*²²

He received £25 for his services, slightly more than the cost of his fare. A man with Charles Palmer's experience - naval service, previous experience of New Zealand conditions, well-educated for the time - would be a very useful man in this position of assistant to the surgeon.

JOHN PALMER [#11] OF *THE GABLES*, WAIMEA WEST [IVAN]

John Palmer married Mary Ann White, spinster of Waimea South, in St Michael's church in 1847, and settled in Waimea West. Charles and Salome were both witnesses. On the *Phoebe* passenger list he was described as a merchant and that was the business he pursued on arrival.

The Waimea West soil was very tough and required the use of heavy ploughs, drawn by oxen rather than horses. He bought a team of oxen and put them to good use.²³ In addition most Waimea settlers came from Nelson by boat, landing at Cotterell's landing place. So, with land to be ploughed and goods to be carried he established an excellent business.

His first home was burnt down, after which he decided to build a new home in permanent materials. 60,000 bricks were produced on the property and a very substantial home, complete with slate roof was erected. This was *The Gables* built in 1862 (image next page); it must have been one of the finest homes in the Nelson area and in 1974 was still a graceful building in a good state of preservation and occupied by Miss Marian Palmer #106, a daughter of John Palmer's son Louis. Attached at the back of the house is a long lean-to building forming the kitchen and work area. The old hand pump and well are in this section. In the room to the left at the front (as you look at it from the road) he conducted a store, a post office and operated a licence to sell liquor which accounts for him being described as a merchant, farmer, publican. As he prospered he no doubt extended his farming enterprise. An old photograph showed oast houses for drying hops at the rear of the house. Marian Palmer said he was one of the earliest settlers to grow hops in Nelson and that he owned two early hotels, namely the *Volunteer Arms* and the *Waimea Inn*. [Refer to Appendices 10a and 10b for more about John.]

SALOME PALMER [#14] [IVAN AND MARY]

On arrival in Nelson Salome needed some means of support. Charles' NZ Company connections may have assisted her to obtain a position as housekeeper at *Thackwood* for the NZ Company's agent, Francis Jollie.²⁴

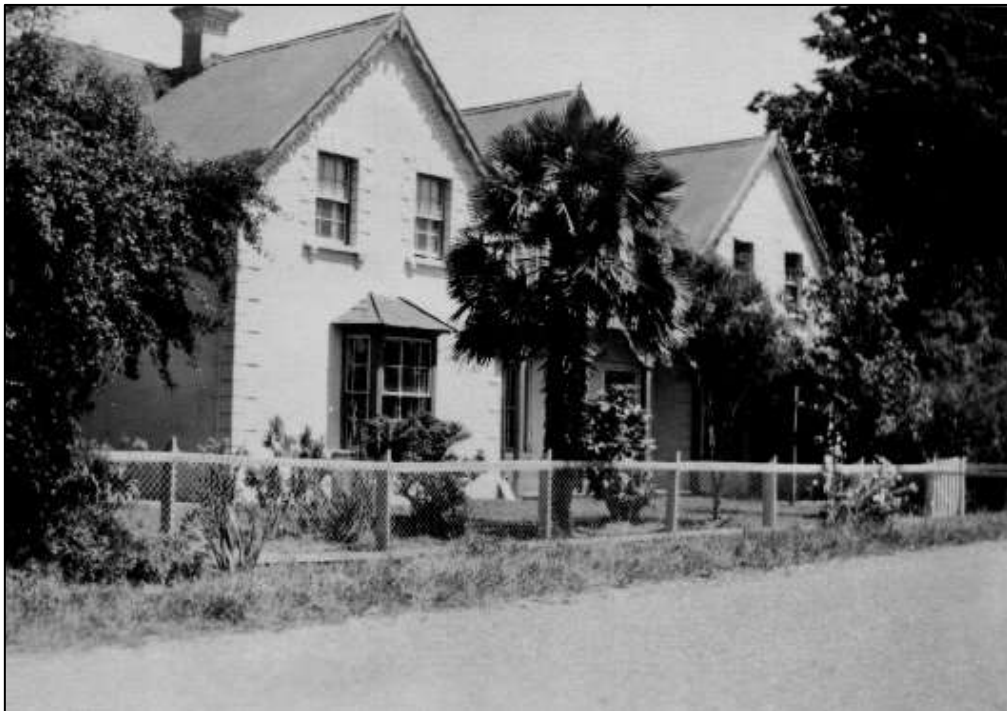
She married Henry Lovell in 1856, by which time she was 34. There were multiple Henry Lovells in NZ about that time, and it is difficult to identify the correct Henry. We do know that their wedding witnesses were the politician Alfred Domett and the Registrar of Marriages Benjamin Hodgson. Marian said that the family felt she was marrying 'beneath her station' - a cabin passenger to someone described as 'a labouring emigrant,' a judgement which might need reconsideration.



JOLLIE'S FARM AT WAKAPUAKA

This watercolour of Thackwood, the Nelson house of politician and New Zealand Company agent Frances Jollie, was painted in 1849. Harvesters and stooks of wheat are in the foreground. Thackwood was on Jollie's 50 acre farm at Wakapuaka, just north of Nelson. *Image: Te Ara : The Encyclopedia of New Zealand*

The painting illustrates the labour-intensive nature of the grain harvest, a busy time for Salome, either in the field or preparing food for the workers. It also help us envisage Charles Palmer's early emigrant life. He had 26 acres planted in grains at the 1849 census of Nelson, all needing to be hand-cut, tied and stooked to dry in the sun before it was ready for threshing.



THE GABLES, WAIMEA WEST, NELSON, THE HOME OF JOHN PALMER, BUILT CIRCA 1860

Classified as a category 1 building by Heritage New Zealand, it remained in the family until the early 21st century and has recently [2024] undergone extensive restoration.⁴⁹

ROBERT PALMER (#16) OF KAIKOURA, THE YOUNGEST SON [IVAN]

Earlier I mentioned Robert Palmer (1836-1865). After the Palmers (John, Charles, Emma, and Salome) had become established in Nelson the youngest member of the family, Robert, together with his mother Miriam, by then a widow, emigrated to Nelson. Their arrival date was not known in Palmer family circles and the Turnbull Library has not been able to trace their arrival. My own reckoning would place it about 1851 - 1853. It is possible that they came from England to Sydney, to contact Miriam's sons Henry and Stephen there, and then carried on to New Zealand on a trading vessel. In this case no record of their arrival would have been kept. Robert worked about in the Nelson, Blenheim and Kaikoura districts and by 1864 considered himself fortunate to be appointed manager on R. Fyffe's station at the Kahutara.⁴³ He kept a diary which is preserved in the Fyffe papers at the Canterbury Museum. It is foolscap size, with a space for each day of the year 1864, and interleaved with pink blotting paper.²⁵

An entry is made every day of the year and records weather, activities on the run, comings and goings to Kaikoura, men employed, visitors, cash transactions, arrivals of the coastal vessel *Ruby*. Salome Wayland states his brother Charles came to Kaikoura in 1864 but in Robert's diary there is not a single reference to Charles or his family. He records receiving letters from his mother 22 Feb, 21 June, 2 Oct, and writing to his mother on 1 March, 1 May, 5 June and this seems to prove his mother was not in Kaikoura in 1864. The only personal record is written in a few spaces early in the diary where he records some of his earlier experiences, preparatory to sending a letter to Bramford.

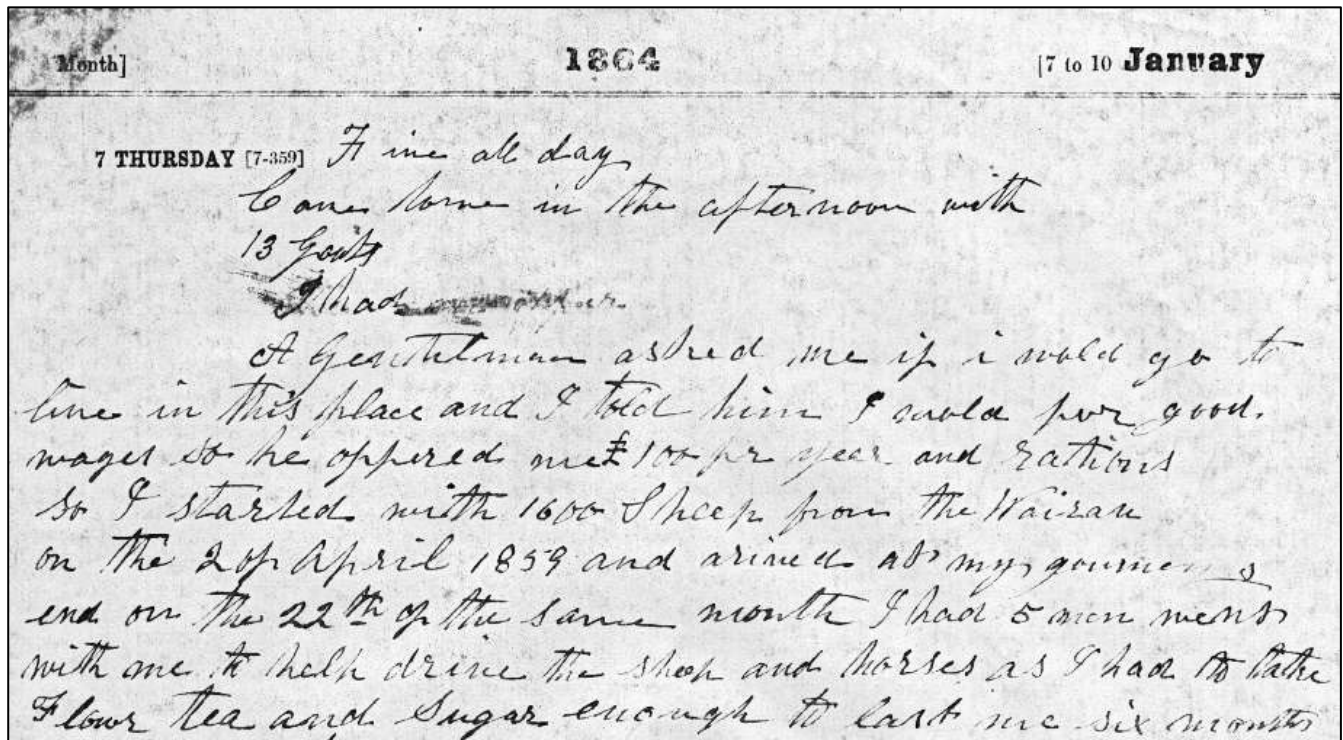
My Dear Friend you must not think that i had forgotten my old Bramford friends because i did not write to you before I can assure you i have often thought of you although so far away. I was very glad to see your letter that you sent to my mother i should have answered it before but i had not seen mother for 8 years untill last July then i went to see her and she showed me your letter. She could not read it her self as her sight is getting very bad and the ink had faded on the paige So she could not answer it before

I wrote to you in July larst but my letter was very short and i now have no newse to tell you so I will give you an account of the life i have led since i came out here.

When i first came out i engaged for 12 months as a stockkeeper for £18 pr year at a place called the Wairau distant 120 miles from Nelson and there was very few people living there then the next year i engaged as a shepherd at 25 £ pr year i had to live alone and my work was to range about over the mountains with my dog and gun i staid in the Wairau as shepherd for seven years then as i had got so used to living alone the inhabertants was getting to thick for me so there was a new place found but a long way inland. it was between two high ranges of mountains one range is 12,000 feet high and the other is 8,000 feet high. they have snow on all year round and in the winter no one can cross over them. A gentilman asked me if i wold go live in this place and i told him i wold for good wages so he offered me £100 pr year and rations. So I started with 1600 sheep from the Wairau on the 2 of April 1859 and arrived at my gournays end on the 22th of the same month I had five men went with me to help drive the sheep and horses as i had to take Flour, tea and Sugar enough to last me six months. the men staid with me five days to help me to build a hut with long grass then when that was done then they bid me good by, lo and left me to my fate for the winter and i never saw any one until the 9 of Nov. it was when i was all alone in the long winter days and nights that i used to think of old bramford

and every one that i knew there i staid in that place for 3 years untill i was out one day and got caurt in a very heavy snow Storm and had to stop all night in the snow it was 4 feet deep it very nearly killed me I had to go to Nelson and was there 4 months under the doctors so i gave up my place turn once then i got the situation that i am in now as manager of a Sheep Station. My wages is £100 pr year and every thing found me and two horses to ride as i was tired of living alone and so far a way from any town.

An image of a sample page of the diary follows, showing how Robert has used blank diary space to prepare his draft letter to Bramford:



PAGE FROM ROBERT PALMER'S FARM DIARY FOR 7 JANUARY 1864

Timeline Robert Palmer: [Mary]

- 1841: at Bramford for the census, living with his parents, no siblings at home
- 1849: 26 Jan letter from Richard Woods, Bramford to John Palmer, Waimea West, reporting conversation with Miriam “. . . as soon as George returns from the Cape she intends to make New Zealand her home” also “Your brother Robert says he will wait no longer than this spring.”³⁴
- 1851: Miriam was in Bramford for the English census, caring for her son George's children. No record found for Robert – probably at sea, as his brother Stephen had been at the same age.
- 1851/52: Miriam and Robert travelled to NZ, probably via Australia to visit Henry and Stephen, no records found.
- 1852: Employed by Joseph Ward, surveyor and landholder of Brookby Station, Awatere, Marlborough, as storekeeper at £18 p.a.

- 1853-1859: 7 years shepherd in the Wairau employed by Ward £25 a year
- 1857: Believed to have been the workman who unearthed the Moa Egg at Fyffe's House, Kaikoura, as discussed on page [Error! Bookmark not defined.](#)
- 1859-1862 3 years shepherd to Ward, virtually alone in the Clarence valley between the Inland and Seaward Kaikouras, paid £100 p.a.
- 1859: Brought the first sheep across the Inland Kaikouras to the Warden run
- 1862: Nearly lost his life in heavy snow, some months in Nelson recovering, probably at John's home in Waimea West.
- 1864: engaged for a year as manager of Fyffe's sheep station at Kahutera £100 p.a.

[Ivan resumes] The 'Gentilman' referred to in Robert Palmer's story would be J. Ward. Early in 1857 Ward had applied for a run in the Clarence in the area below the Acheron junction. He applied again in May and the application was for land on the south side of the Clarence between the Gore and the Tytler. To use this land efficiently he needed a route from the lower Wairau. In 1858 he found that route up the Waihopi, crossing to the Awatere, up the Awatere to the Tone, over the Tone saddle down to the Clarence upstream from Quail flat and the Tytler. The journey with 1600 sheep could well have taken Robert Palmer 20 days as he travelled over this route. What a prospect, winter near, his accommodation a grass hut, not another person for miles, food primitive, everything primitive, and a Clarence winter closing in.

Ward had found a route through the Inland Kaikouras, but he still had to find a route over the Seaward Kaikouras through which he could take his sheep to Fyffe's at Kaikoura for shearing. He returned in the early summer to search for that route, discovered what is now known as the Palmer Saddle in January 1860, and returned to where Palmer was holding the sheep. Ward went on to Kaikoura and Palmer and Dennis almost certainly brought the sheep to Kaikoura for shearing.

Robert Palmer certainly earned the right to have his name preserved in this area and his name occurs on today's maps - the Palmer Saddle, the Palmer Stream, the Palmer yards and Mt Palmer. They can be found in the inch to the mile series NZMS Charwell Sheet S48. The Palmer Saddle is 3185 feet, map ref 572980 between the Clarence and the Conway Rivers, the Palmer Stream runs down from the Palmer Saddle into the Clarence, the Palmer Yards map ref 617078, Mount Palmer 3239 ft map ref 634091. The Palmer Yards are probably in the area in which his grass hut was built.

To reach Kaikoura he probably travelled up the most westerly branch of the Palmer Stream over the Palmer Saddle and down the Conway until he reached a point about 6 miles above the present Charwell School. On present day maps a foot track is shown from Quail Flat to the Willows Hut to the Palmer Yards to the Palmer Stream, up the Palmer Stream over the Palmer Saddle and down the Conway. The run was known as the Warden.

Some further quotations from Robert Palmer's diary are of interest. At one time in 1864, 28 June, he records that he started for Nelson having received £50 from Mr Fyffe (wages for six months probably).

'my fellow countrymen and i volunteered into the 5th regiment of foot of which General England was the Colonel. Other foreigners went with us to the number perhaps of twenty-five of whom several though they presented themselves as Italians or Germans were in point of fact Frenchmen.'

He returned on 3 Aug leaving a month's gap in his diary, but he later filled in this month as for January 1865.

He records that on 25 Jan 1865 he 'went from W.B.'s to Blenheim with the plough,' and on 26 Jan 'came to Lyfords'. This would be Thomas Lyford at Clarence Ferry, Fay's great grandfather.

Some further extracts from the diary are:

- the *Ruby* brought the bricks; came home with the bricks (for chimney or well?)
- saw Gilling at the sawpit; went up to the bush for timber and shingels
- W Smith's tobacco 210 lbs, tobacco in shed 360 lbs, total 570 lbs
- many references of 'wood to Kaikoura'
- a few references to liquor 'Dickinson came home drunk' 'Mr McInnes came over but too tipsy to work' 'Mr Harmon came home at night but left Thompson drunk on the road. Thompson came home in the morning.'
- lots of expeditions to catch straying horses, cattle and sheep
- Sunday was a day of rest, and he spent many Sundays at Dickinson's.
- Sheep shearing tallies Smith 63, HB 20, Kerepted 66, Preston 68

In May 1865 he was found one morning lying dead beside his horse in front of the Kahutara run homestead Rakanui Gully (marked R on my map, page 4). Marian Palmer of *The Gables* had the following letter:

Picton May 12 65

Mr John Palmer,

Sir,

I am very sorry indeed to have to write to you this letter. It contains some very sad news. Mr Fyffe is from Kaikoura is here attending council. A special came a/c today to tell him that your brother Robert had been thrown from his horse last Friday (May 9th) and killed. Poor fellow. I sympathise with all his friends especially his poor mother. I do not write to her as I think it better that you should break the matter to her. Your brother slept at Mr Fyffe's house at the Peninsula rode by Mr Fyffe's house at the Kahutara about eight miles. He was well, spoke to one of the men in a joking manner and ten minutes after (one) of the men named Gilling found him quite dead in front of the house. Mr Keene J.P. examined the body and the only mark visible was a slight bruise on the temple and nose. This I learn from a letter of Mr Keene's. Mr Fyffe will write to Mrs Sharp as most probably your brother died without a will - Poor fellow I feel extremely sorry. He was a faithful good fellow. I sincerely hope he is better off. It is the will of God which is the only consolation.

I am truly yours

B.S. Ward [not sure of initials]

Robert Palmer's inquest was presided over by the local J.P., "White" Keene, owner of *Swyncombe*. In a letter to Ward he mentioned he would be burying Robert next to "Old Pat", one of the early shepherds in the district. The location of these graves is not known. I have no explanation for "Mrs Sharp" in the above letter. Could Robert have been planning to marry a widow? Or was she his landlady? [Mary]

THE MOA'S EGG [IVAN]



BILL EDWARDS, CURATOR OF FYFFE HOUSE, KAIKOURA, DISPLAYS THE CAST OF A MOA EGG BURIED WITH A PERSON 700-900 YEARS AGO AND FOUND BEHIND FYFFE HOUSE IN 1857. THE EGG IS USED TO EXPLAIN KAIKOURA'S HISTORY TO VISITORS.

*Source: Heritage Advocate, May 1997
photo Marlborough Express*

In Palmer family circles for the last hundred years, Robert Palmer was the man who discovered a complete moa egg while digging foundations for Fyffe's house on the Kaikoura peninsula. The house still stands in 1974 and has been occupied by the Low family for many years. George Low, the present occupant, was able to point out the spot where the moa's egg was found, in the angle of the shape of the house. ┘ The foundations of the house are the vertebrae of whales, huge blocks of whale bone, just as solid as the day they were put in 114 years ago. On the property are huge whalebone gateposts and some whalebone fence posts.

The family story is that the egg was sent to the Science Museum at Kensington, London. We searched for it in 1963 but could not trace it. Since then, the egg has come to light, has been sold and resold, but has finally come home to the Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa in Wellington. A very full account of the wanderings of this egg is given in a paper *Fyffe's Revisited* which describes its discovery as "one of the most significant archaeological events to occur in New Zealand last century."²⁶ The date of its finding is now believed to have been 1857. It was exhibited in the New Zealand Exhibition of 1865 and then sent to London where it was sold at auction for £200. Robert Palmer's timeline (page 27) suggests he was shepherding in the Wairau in 1857, but it is quite possible he spent time in Kaikoura during that period.

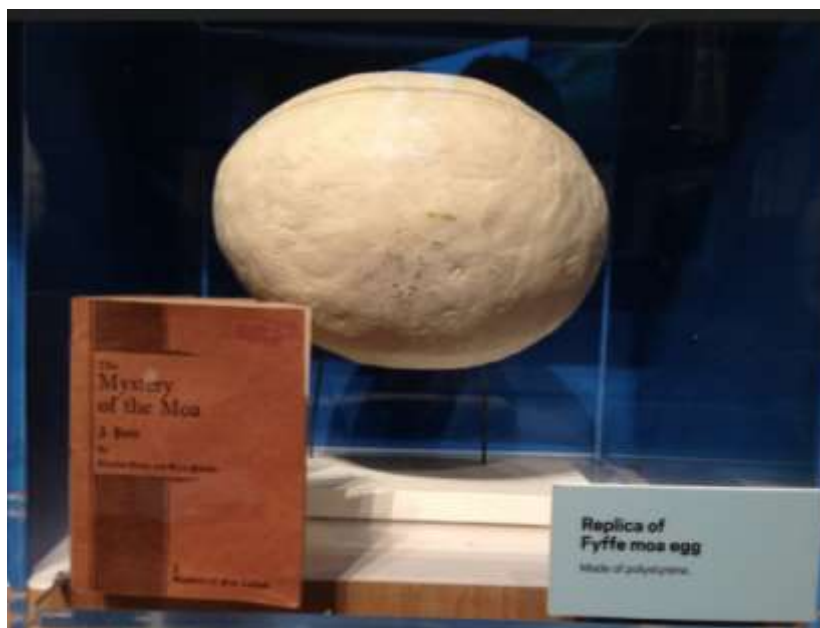
For further reading go to appendix 13 page 113 in which Pat Palmer appeals for information about the adze recovered from the same burial site as the egg and subsequently mislaid.

Another reference to Robert Palmer in the Ward papers:

Agreement with Robert Palmer	May 30 1853
Engaged as assnt shepherd and to do any necessary work belonging to the station for 1 year from the date he arrives at the station for the yearly wage of £20.	
To Mr Jas Ward	signed Robert Palmer

DISPLAY AT KAIKOURA MUSEUM

Image
Helen Palmer 2017



MIRIAM'S WIDOWHOOD [MARY]

So long as her husband was employed by Mumford, accommodation was available, probably as part of his employment. This would need to be vacated on John's death in 1847, to make way for another labourer, Miriam having insufficient income to pay the rent. In her letter to her daughter Salome (page 14), Miriam refers to living in "the old shed", without any explanation. Perhaps this shed was regularly used for widows' accommodation.

Miriam's main concern was her responsibility to provide a home for her son Robert, then aged 11, and to that end she continued with her laundry work, though finding it difficult at age 55. Meanwhile her older sons were looking for a better solution. George, who was married and living in London, urged her to come and live with them, but that would leave Robert unsupported. A major economic slump which left George unemployed put an end to that plan. Finally, it was decided that Miriam and Robert should come to John and/or Charles in Nelson, and they would guarantee the fares. Miriam was in Bramford for the census on 30 March 1851 and probably travelled soon afterwards, accompanied by Robert.

Salome Wayland stated in her *Press* interview that her grandmother lived with Charles and his family when he moved to Kaikoura, residing there until her death. I think Salome was confused here. Salome had been born in Nelson not long after Miriam's arrival from England. Miriam's sons, John and Charles, lived in fairly close proximity at Waimea West and East, and no matter which son she actually lived with, for over a decade Salome would have remembered her grandmother being a fairly constant presence in her childhood world.

When Charles moved his family to Kaikoura he had no house to take his mother to, they would need to build one. By then Miriam was an old lady with less than a year of life ahead of her, she may even have died just before their departure. John had recently rehoused his family at *The Gables*, and it seems obvious that Miriam should remain in Nelson in comparative comfort.

Miriam's death certificate states she died in Nelson on 8 March 1866. I doubt if Miriam ever came to Kaikoura. Charles' family did not leave Nelson until 1866 (page 35), and it may have been Miriam's death that freed him to proceed with his plan to move to Kaikoura.



MIRIAM PALMER'S HEADSTONE, ST MICHAEL'S CHURCHYARD, WAIMEA WEST

Sacred to the memory of Miriam Palmer died March 8th 1866 aged 74 years

PHOTOGRAPH “MIRIAM PALMER AND ROBERT PALMER” [MARY]

This photo, captioned “Miriam Palmer and Robert Palmer”, is sourced from the papers of Jock Sherrard, author of the official history of the Kaikoura district. None of the local Palmers appear to have known of its presence in the Kaikoura Museum until recently.

Two of Miriam’s sons are mentioned in Sherrard’s book, which sufficiently explains this photo’s inclusion in his collection. Robert is assumed to be Miriam’s youngest son, born in 1836, who appears to be aged about 5. If so, the photo was taken in England in the early 1840s. The Museum reports that their image is a photo of a photo, and not the original.



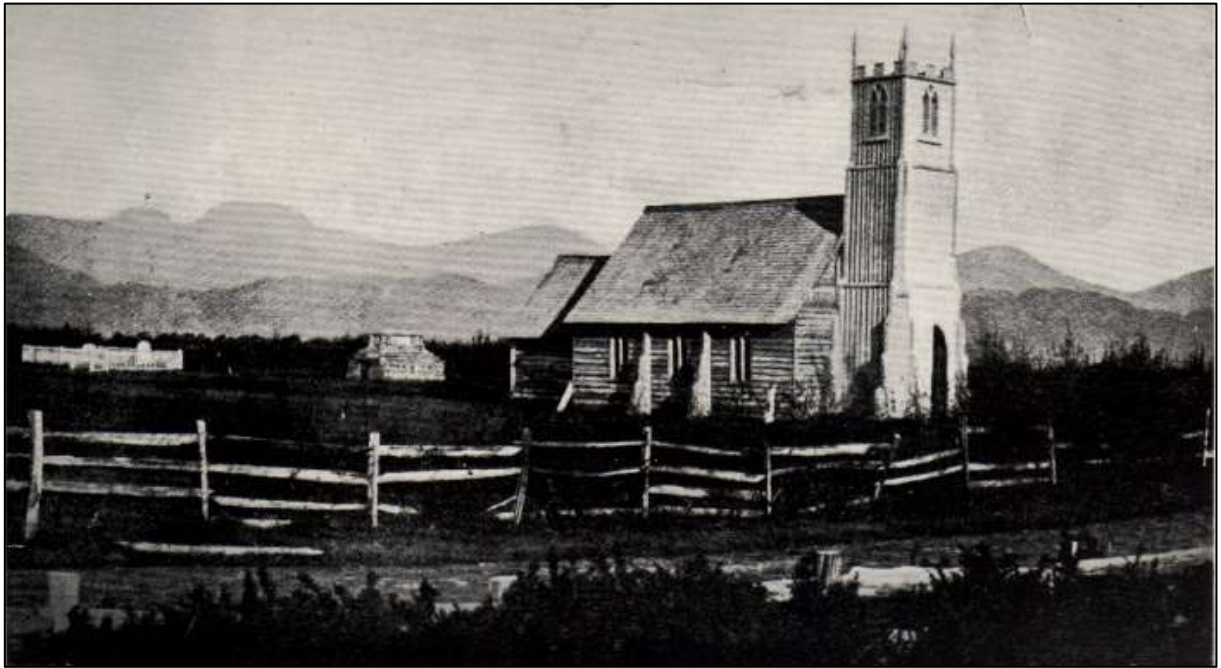
In the early 1840s photographic studios were just starting to appear in major cities, but Ipswich could have been visited by an itinerant photographer. Photos cost the equivalent of a labourer’s weekly wage. What motivation might have led to this extravagance for a working-class family, and could a benefactor have paid for it? The answer could be that three of Miriam’s older children, John, Charles and Salome were preparing to emigrate to New Zealand in 1842, and would have welcomed an opportunity to

take an image of their mother with them. We know that her son John’s employer contributed financially to his emigration. This donor could also facilitated this photograph.

We observe in this image the fixed stare of sitters who must not move during a long exposure. The child’s posture looks awkward because he would have been supported by a concealed wooden stand to remind him to keep still. The absence of props and the plain background are typical features of these rare, very early photographs. The clothing would have been “Sunday Best” and quite possibly second hand. Decoration is limited to a white collar, as expected for the working class. Boys and girls were dressed similarly at that date, but the short hair with side parting and the addition of a belt with snake buckle identify a male. The age at which breeches for boys replaced pantaloons and skirts varied widely and could be as late as 8 years.

An alternative interpretation has been considered and dismissed. It proposed that the child was a grandson, Robert George Palmer #41, born in 1847 to Miriam’s third son George. The date would have had to be 1851, by which time Miriam was widowed, and living in very poor circumstances. The luxury of having her photo taken would then have been quite unrealistic, and there was no longer a potential benefactor on hand. Robert George Palmer lived in the Marlborough Sounds and died in Blenheim, but had no known association with Kaikoura.

Miriam’s final years were spent at Waimea West and it is likely the original of this photo passed to a descendant of John Palmer, or to Nelson Provincial Archives.



THE FIRST ST MICHAEL'S CHURCH, WAIMEA WEST 1843–1867, MIRIAM PALMER'S BURIAL-PLACE



KAIKOURA 1873 POLICE STATION AND POST & TELEGRAPH OFFICE

It would have been even more primitive in 1865-66 when the Palmers arrived.

*Sourced from Murray Boyd's Book*²⁷

*See also Sherrard, Fig 41*²⁸

CHARLES PALMER MOVES TO KAIKOURA [IVAN]

At this distance in time, it has been difficult to reconstruct the movements of Charles Palmer and his family after their arrival in Kaikoura by sea. Salome Wayland states he arrived in 1864 and purchased a section on Mt Fyffe. I think he first arrived in Kaikoura in 1865. In May 1865 Ward had written from Picton to John Palmer in Nelson informing him of Robert Palmer's death and asking him to convey the sad news to his mother (page 29). Had Charles and his family and his mother been in Kaikoura the natural assumption would be that Charles as next of kin on the spot would advise the relations in Nelson of Robert's death. In the article below, Oscar Palmer reports the family's arrival in Kaikoura early in 1866, and that Charles had made a preliminary visit in 1865 before taking the big decision to move his family and the livestock.

NELSON TO KAIKOURA IN 1866

Dictated by Edmund Oscar Palmer, who was born in Nelson on May 28, 1846, and transcribed by Charles Oscar Palmer, his son.

(SPECIAL FOR THE OTAGO WITNESS.)

Charles Palmer sen. was born in Essex in 1818. He served in the Royal Navy and fought under the renowned Charles Napier. He served aboard a small trader between Sydney and the New Zealand coast in the mid 'thirties, and took service for the New Zealand Company when the Nelson settlement was planned. He drove the first team of bullocks in those parts. There his family of eight or nine was born.²

In 1865 he journeyed overland to look at the Kaikoura district, then being surveyed into small holdings – that is, the swamp, peninsula, and township, the great outlying areas of land being locked up by and for the wool kings of those times. Mr Palmer determined to bring his family round to Kaikoura.

In the following year, 1866, he chartered the ketch or schooner *Isabella*.² She belonged to Hobart and was running for Lyttelton. For £40 he chartered her to carry his family, farm implements, provisions, one year's stock of flour, etc., to Kaikoura. They put to sea the evening of April 1,

1866. When near the French Pass they fell in with the Wellington packet. Dr Monroe and some other Parliamentarians were aboard. The doctor, knowing Mr Palmer, after some conference, called for three cheers for the pioneering father and mother and their children.

Meanwhile, the elder boys, Charles Webber and Edmund Oscar Palmer, left Appleby on the overland track with the livestock - three draught animals, one horse and two mares, several milch cows, and some heifers. Their first day's journey was up the Maitai Valley to the foot of Mocketapu, where they stayed the night with a settler.

In the Maitai River valley the drovers met a gold escort, the noble mounted guard of which rode by with drawn and flourishing weapons, and pushed the cattle over the bank of the pack track. It was in the "good old times" you know, just a fortnight before the horrible deeds of Burgess, Levi, Sullivan and Kelly about that very locality.

The gold escort left one fine cow with an injured back. She could be taken only at a snail's pace until she was exchanged for another cow a few days after. They called the animal they got in exchange "Baituna," as that was the name of the property from which she came (possibly Waituna or Kaituna).

The second day's journey took them up over Mocketapu and down into the Pelorus

Valley. They camped between the Pelorus and the Whakamerino streams. Oscar knew this country well, as he had been to the Whakamerino gold rush a few years before. He had also been down to the Wairau several times, and round by Tophouse to the Wairau.

The third day they followed the Whakamerino and Pelorus rivers to Havelock township. When Oscar first saw Havelock there stood but two shanties there. After the gold rush there was half a mile of good business places along the beach. They stayed the night with a friend, Mr Story, in the Kaituna valley. They did not come through Blenheim but passed above to strike the Taylor Pass into the Awatere, where they passed the night in the accommodation house.

Next day they followed the riverbank down to Starborough, then made across the hills to Grassmere, a brackish shallow lagoon. They found some fresh water, however, and boiled the billy with tussock.

It was here they met three men who were riding for Nelson. One of these was "White" Keene (George Ruck Keene). He was pleased to meet and welcome settlers on the way to Kaikoura. They made a long day's journey past Flaxbourne and camped near Tar Barrel Hill. Here they heard the first sound of the sea since leaving home, and Oscar climbed a prominence to look out for the *Isabella*. He saw only a big, square-rigged vessel. There was not much shipping on these coasts in 1866.

They stopped at the Flags, and, as their father had told them to, they milked a cow and gave some milk to Portuguese Joe's wife. Charles senr. had been entertained by Joe Martin the year before. So, up to their knees in sand, they came past Keckerangu to the present Shades. Dr Cheytor lived

some 16 miles inland, at Coverham, in those times.

They reached the Clarence that evening. Tom Lyford, the ferryman, found them a ford, and they got the cattle safely over. Only three times in Oscar's later experience did he ford the Clarence without swimming his horse. They passed the night at Lyford's, and had a good "pitch" with Tom, an old Nelson man.

Then, and for 20 years thereafter, only a bridle track led from Clarence to Kaikoura. A big crowd of Maoris lived under the bluff at the boat sheds, about five miles from Waipapa. There were also a lot of Maori graves there.

There was a grove of fine karaka trees at Aniseed Creek, and a large number of Maoris from Waipapa and Maungamaunu were camped there to pick the berries. They met Mr Harry Lovell riding north with his packhorse and the fortnightly mail.

They passed Maungamaunu and the Hapuka streams and left the cattle for the night on a nice grassy patch by Inglis's creek, the Waiwhero.

They forded the Pateke and rode on to the Kaikoura township. There they met their sisters at the ford across the Waikowai, into what is now known as the West End. The *Isabella* had got into Kaikoura about Thursday.

Charlie and Oscar arrived on Saturday evening and passed the night with the family at Joe Charleston's hotel, where the Adelphi now stands.

Otago Witness, 4 October 1927, p.76

Some corrections to this article are included at note 2, page [130](#).

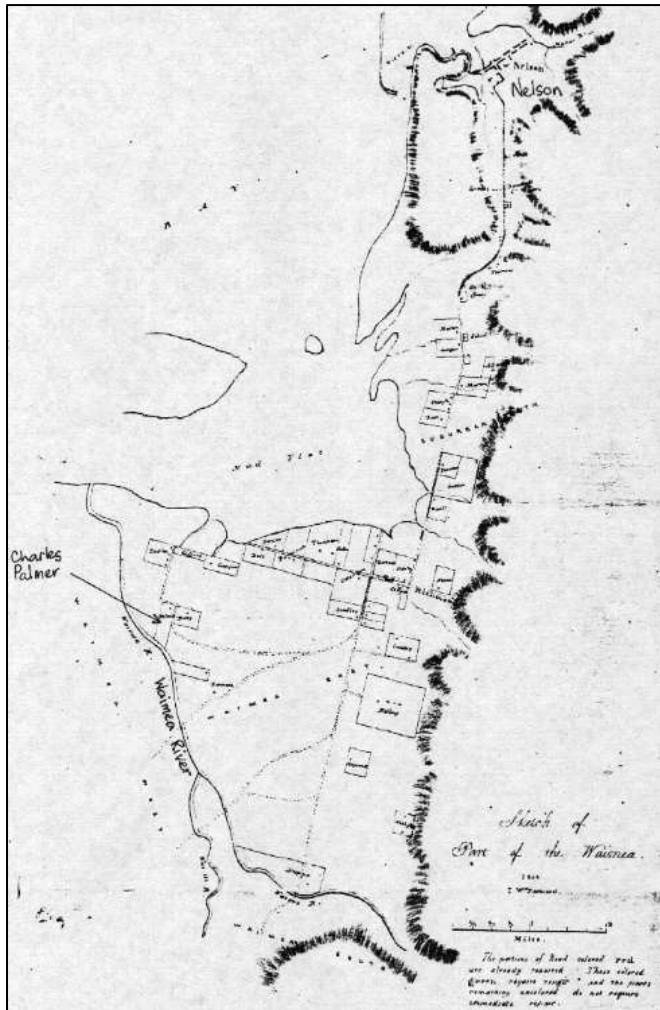
FLOODING AT APPLEBY, AND LAND TRANSFERS [IVAN]

Charles Palmer's Nelson section is marked by an arrow on the Waimea map on the next page. Situated on the east bank of the Waimea River, near the present Appleby Bridge and not far from the river mouth, it was a prime candidate for flooding. [Note that Charles at Waimea East would have been quite near his brother John, who settled just across the river at Waimea West.]

Charles had struggled at Appleby from 1843-1864, floods regularly bringing destruction to his efforts. In 1864 and until May 1865, Robert Palmer was managing Fyffe's Kahutara run but in his diary makes no mention of seeing his brother Charles or his stock. The Kaikoura reserve was first offered for sale on 29 Feb 1864 but sales were few and continued very slowly for the next few years. Robert states he left Kaikoura in July 1864 and went to Nelson. No doubt he discussed Kaikoura with Charles while in Nelson and told him of the land available there. As a result of these discussions Charles may have decided to give up in Nelson and try his fortune in Kaikoura. If I am correct in assuming Charles arrived in Kaikoura in 1865 another event may have influenced his decision. His brother Robert died in May 1865 and Robert, early in 1865, had been granted a section on Mt Fyffe, the section which was destined to become *Brentwood*, (A on map, page 4.)

I obtained a copy of the certificate of title to the section which became *Brentwood*. It describes 'the fifty-six acres three roods and eighteen perches more or less . . . as the same was originally granted the thirty first day of January one thousand eight hundred and sixty five under the hand of Sir George Grey K.C.B. the Governor of New Zealand and the seal of the colony to Robert Palmer, of Kaikoura aforesaid, settler.'

The title in which the above statement is made is in the name of Charles Webber Palmer of Kaikoura. Being the eldest son, and Charles senior having died in 1870, Charles Webber Palmer received the transfer from his Uncle Robert's estate on 28 Feb 1874, nine years after Robert's death and four years after Charles senior's death.



*Sketch of Part of the
Waimea*

1848

JW Barnicoat

The Lands and Survey department informed me they had no record of any land purchase made by Charles Palmer between 1864 and 1870. A few 10-acre sections, six of them on the Lyell Creek, had been granted to whalers. I think it was on one of these sections that Charles Palmer first settled. He had brought a horse driven flour mill to Kaikoura in 1866 and by 1870 his sons, Charlie and Oscar had installed a flour mill powered by a water wheel situated midway between Hawthorne and Mill Road on the Lyell Creek.

[Insert by Mary] On 2 August 1866, the eldest daughter, Annie, was married to Charles Evans. A notice posted in the Nelson papers described her father as “Mr C Palmer, butcher of Kaikoura, formerly of Appleby.” This reveals another income stream to get them through the early period. They may have planned to gradually slaughter at least some of the stock which had been driven from Nelson and then maintain the beef supply from their own breeding animals. Charles’ first visit to Kaikoura the previous year would have alerted him to the community’s need for a butcher.

[Ivan] I think Charles soon moved to a farm at the junction of Postmans and Mt Fyffe Road. A chance meeting with Tom and Jim Hemingway on 30 March 1974 provided me with some useful information, namely that the original Palmer home on the mill site was still standing, on what is now 181 Beach Road, and that Fay's father had told them he was born in this house in 1871. I later checked this in the *Kaikoura Herald*. In the 3rd June issue 1871 the birth is recorded 'Birth on 28th inst at the Lyell Mill Kaikoura the wife of E.O. Palmer a son.' No living Palmer knew this.



FIRST PALMER HOME IN KAIKOURA, CIRCA 1866 – FAY SKIPWORTH 1974 refer note 42, page [132](#)

We went to visit the old home, cruised round, crossed Lyell Creek by footbridge and a few things clicked into place. The Palmer mill was certainly at this point on the Lyell Creek. There was a race which looked as if it might have brought water down to the wheel. Oscar used to recall listening to the sound of the mill during the night. Oscar and Elizabeth's second son Charles Oscar was also born here. They lived and worked here until 1873 when the whole mill site was sold to Harry Parsons. In 1876 the mill was taken over by Athelston Parsons who moved it 300 to 400 yards upstream. Rex Boyd remembers the remains of the old mill wheel and mill stone lying on this site. Here too the line of an old water race can still be seen (1974). The water was drawn off into a race at a point upstream from the Mill Road bridge and ran down a race which crossed Mill Road about a chain west of the bridge. The Palmer house, now over 100 years old and in some state of disrepair is a substantial one, on wooden piles and of pit sawn timber.

In 1873 Oscar and his family would have had to vacate the mill site. Fay remembers her father telling her he walked to the Suburban school from the Hailes Creek area, a long walk for a small child so perhaps Oscar and family moved to this area in 1873 before moving to *Brentwood* in 1882.

That first farm, at the junction of Postmans Road and the Mt Fyffe Road, is marked E on my map. A glance at the map shows how vulnerable this site was to flooding from Lukes Creek and the Waimangaroa. It was from here that the great floods of 1868 drove him out, as Salome says 'to his other farm about a mile further up the mountain slope.' *Brentwood* is about 'a mile further up the mountain slope' and fits the description of 'his other farm.' So Charles and Emma, plagued by floods as in Nelson, settled in at *Brentwood* in 1868. By this time Charles and his sons would have cleared some of the bush from *Brentwood* and started to farm the cleared land. The Palmers seem to have been capable and experienced house builders and soon after 1868 the first home on *Brentwood* must have been built.

Emma died in 1876. At this time the youngest of her children would have been unable to fend for themselves but I have no information on how they managed, or were managed. By now the farm was a going concern with some improvements and stock. Once again it took a long time to get the ownership of *Brentwood* straightened out - six years in fact. The next entry on the title:

Transfer Number 659 Charles Webber Palmer to Edmund Oscar Palmer 25 Jan 1882

So Edmund Oscar was now the official owner of *Brentwood*. Apparently he needed some money, perhaps to pay out the other members of the family because on the same day he took out two mortgages:

Mortgage 360 Edmund Oscar Palmer to Francis Pallisier Wayland 25 Jan 1882

[Wayland's wife was Oscar Palmer's sister, the Salome Wayland interviewed for the *Press* article in 1940.]

Mortgage 361 Edmund Oscar Palmer to Robert Warner 25 Jan 1882

He discharged both these mortgages in 1884. In 1889 he again took a mortgage on the property and discharged it in 1898.

Transfer No. 5218 Edmund Oscar Palmer to Edmund Sutherland Palmer of Kaikoura, farmer
10 July 1914

From the time of their marriage in 1902 Fay's mother and father had worked hard on *Brentwood* without any real security as the property was held in Edmund Oscar's name until 1914.

Titles were also transferred to Charles Oscar, Glenburn Morrison and William Arthur at this time. Robert Daniel had died in November 1913, and his wife in February 1914. Perhaps these two events influenced his decision.

CHARLES WEBBER PALMER [#30] – THE FORGOTTEN SON [MARY]

What became of Charles and Emma Palmer's eldest son?

He was born in Nelson about 1843, when there was no system for registering births, so the date has been calculated from his age at death. In the NZ Company Nelson census of 1849, young children were not recorded by name. He was listed as "male child aged 2-7 who can read but not write" in Charles Palmer's household. Mr C W Palmer was a witness at his sister Jane's marriage in Kaikoura in 1872.

By 1975, the family knew only that Oscar and his elder brother Charles W Palmer had driven the stock from Nelson to Kaikoura, and a newspaper article stated that "[Oscar's] brother left for England. . ." (page 90). Even when Ivan Skipworth found the name on the title deed of the *Brentwood* property he failed to recognise it for what it was, preferring to go with an idea that "Charles Webber Palmer" acknowledged a joint title to the property occupied by Charles Palmer and Emma (nee Webber). So long as the title was in his name, C W Palmer would have an entitlement to vote, but a listing on the electoral roll did not necessarily indicate his presence farming the land. The *Brentwood* title deed and associated land documents may be the only contemporary evidence of Charlie's full name.

The family seem to have accepted the story that Charlie had sailed away, never to be heard of again. A photograph may have survived though, because Rebecca (Palmer) Crawford (#123j) was able to state "He was a very handsome, big, dark man. He did not live long. "

Kaikoura County Board.

IN accordance with Clause XI. of "The Roads Act, 1873," a MEETING of the RATEPAYERS of the Suburban District of the above County, will be held in the Court-house, Kaikoura, on MONDAY, the 6th day of October, at Four o'clock p.m., to ELECT ONE MEMBER of the Board, in lieu of Mr C. W. PALMER, resigned.

By order of the Board,

WILLIAM SMITH,
Chairman.

846

Recently, with *Kaikoura Star* by this time included in PapersPast I revisited these questions and found the name C. W. Palmer in connection with the local Roads Board, from which he had resigned his elected position.²⁹

That all seemed to fit with a plan to travel to England, until I found this next item: ³⁰

Supreme Court (at Picton) Regina v. C. W. Palmer. Prisoner was charged with committing an indecent assault on the person of Mary Houl, a resident at the Kaikouras, . . . pleaded Not Guilty. Mr Conolly appeared for the defence. Mary Houl, William Henry Houl, her husband, and J. Paap gave evidence relating to the offence, but there were some parts not admissible for publication. The case was not an aggravated one; and Mr Conolly, in his defence, suggested that prisoner was not complete master of his actions, the evidence of Constable Paap supporting the suggestion. His Honor summed up, explaining the law of the case; and the Jury retired to consider their verdict. After a brief consultation, they returned into Court with a verdict of Guilty, but recommended the prisoner to mercy. His Honor sentenced prisoner to six months' imprisonment with hard labor, and stated that this comparatively lenient sentence was given partly on account of the recommendation of the Jury and partly because it appeared there was something in the suggestion of Mr Conolly. It is probable that his enforced incarceration will restore his mind to its proper balance and remove from him the delusions under which he now suffers.

What else was going on in the family at this time?

Charles Palmer senior had died in 1870, which explains Charlie's place on the Road Board. The Palmers were a large and influential family in the Suburban district, and later the second son, Oscar, would be elected to the County Council (essentially the successor to the Road Board). But I am suspicious of the timing of that resignation. Had the assault already occurred, and a period of incarceration been anticipated? Was it better to get the resignation over quietly than to be forced? Oscar as patriarch would have protected the family's reputation as much as possible. I tend to think that travel to England was part of a cover story to explain Charlie's disappearance. Did the family come to an agreement that they would never mention him again?

If so, it was surprisingly successful, as none of Faith's cousins could offer any suggestion about the later life of their grandfather's brother when Ivan was asking questions.

With this new information I went back to reconsider the title deed to the *Brentwood* property. A Crown Grant had been issued to Charles' brother Robert in 1865, not long before Robert's death. The following year Charles moved his family to Kaikoura, but the land remained in Robert's name until 28 Feb 1874 when it was transferred to Charles Webber Palmer, the senior male member of the Kaikoura Palmers by that time. His resignation from the Road Board did not occur until September of that year, so I do not think the timing of this land transfer was related to the assault.

The next transfer, to brother Oscar, occurred on 25 January 1882. Why then? I needed to know when Charlie died, and where. Nothing in the English death indexes seemed to match a Charles Webber Palmer born about 1843.

In New Zealand I found 5 Charles Palmers who died between 1874 and 1918. Four of them were ruled out because their birth year was either too early or too late : 1824, 1832, 1833, 1856. That left a Charles Palmer born about 1843 who died in 1888:

DEATHS IN THE DISTRICT OF <i>Christchurch</i> DURING THE QUARTER ENDING ON <i>30</i> of <i>September</i> 188 <i>8</i>										
No.	DESCRIPTION OF DECEASED.		CAUSE OF DEATH.	FATHER & MOTHER.	IF SERIAL NUMBERS REGISTERED.		IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED.		INFORMANT.	SIGNATURE.
	When and where died.	1. Name and Surname. 2. Rank, Profession, or Occupation.			Sex and Age.	1. Name and Surname of Father. 2. Name and, if known, Mother's Name and Surname. 3. Rank or Profession of Father.	When and where born.	1. Where born. 2. How long in New Zealand.		
401	1888 August 8	111 Charles Palmer Sunnyside 101 Farmer	Verdict of Jury 45 Consumption	111 Charles Palmer 101 Emma Palmer family of Nelson 101 Farmer		111 Nelson 101 Home 101 Smith			111 Robert Allen 101 Agent for Christchurch 101 Christchurch	111 Allen 101 August 15

This Charles Palmer (no middle name recorded), died on 8 August 1888 at Sunnyside [the Christchurch mental asylum]; his certificate describes him as a farmer, aged 45, who died of consumption; his parents were Charles Palmer, a farmer and Emma Palmer, formerly Webber; he was born in Nelson and lived his whole life in NZ; he never married; the informant was recorded as an agent for the Christchurch coroner.

The inquest heard medical evidence that he had been admitted 5 years previously with cough and chest symptoms, and on 3 occasions was spitting blood. This had improved with treatment, but he had gradually deteriorated over the last 10 months. The cause of death was said to be phthisis (TB). His insanity displayed itself in harmless delusions. He never used violence, believing himself to be a titled person, and was addicted to writing letters to all sorts of important people. The verdict of Coroner with six jurymen, was death from natural causes.

Christchurch City Council burials database has a record for Charles Palmer, 8 Aug 1888, from Addington cemetery, with no other personal information but the date matches. Family details on the death certificate match our Charles. Brother Oscar may have been advised around 1882 to "tidy up Charlie's affairs" as he had not made a will. My interpretation is that the land was transferred to Oscar, who then took out mortgages so that he could share the value with his other siblings.

EDMUND “OSCAR” PALMER [#31] [IVAN]

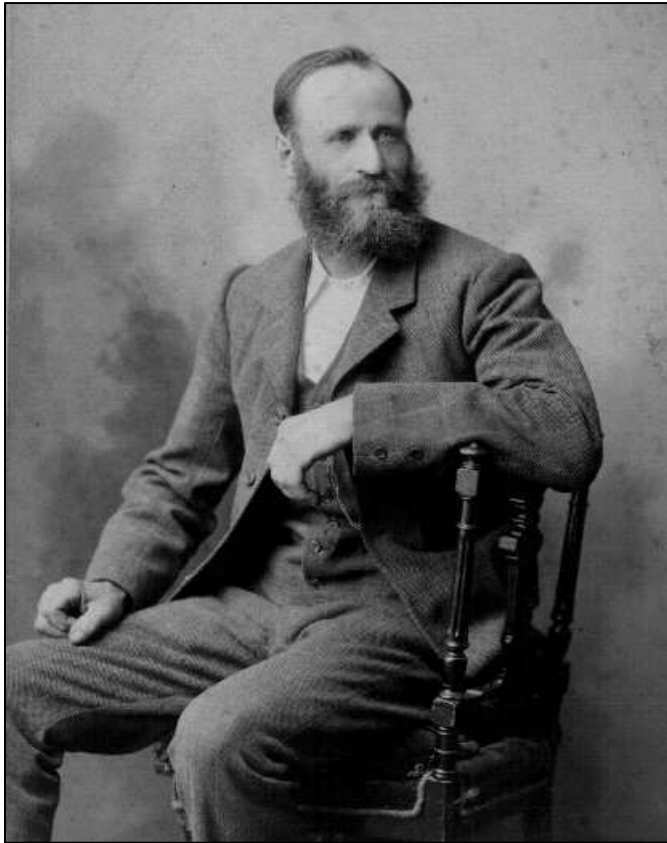
Edmund Oscar Palmer, son of Charles Palmer, was born in Nelson in 1846. When his father left Nelson to settle in Kaikoura in 1866, Oscar was 20. While the family moved by sea, the movement of the stock was by an overland route, the two oldest sons Charlie and Oscar being responsible for driving the stock from Appleby to Kaikoura. I have no information on their route, but it would almost certainly have been Appleby - Golden Downs - Top House - Old Tarndale - Acheron River - Clarence River - Jollies Pass - Hanmer - Waiau - Charwell - Kaikoura. This route had been discovered by Weld in 1855 and it was soon in use as the shortest stock route from Nelson to Canterbury. In 1864 38,500 sheep are reported to have used the route. It must have been a difficult and exciting trip for two young men. The distance from Appleby to Kaikoura would be about 200 miles. The time? In 1904 regular drovers were taking 21 days from Nelson to Hanmer. Add 8 or 10 days to Kaikoura, a total of 30 days, and this probably in good weather.

[Mary interrupts] Reading Oscar's account of bringing the stock to Kaikoura (page 35), makes it clear they took a coastal route via Marlborough, not the inland route via Tophouse and Hanmer that was being used for large flocks of sheep. Two reasons for this choice come to mind. The article reveals that Oscar had spent time at the Whakamarina gold rush in Marlborough and was familiar with the first part of their route. They also had acquaintances at other points along the way. And importantly they were not bringing sheep. The 50 odd acres of land Charles had in Kaikoura would have been virgin forest and swamp, quite different from the thousands of acres of native grasslands of the sheep stations. The Palmers' early endeavours were focussed on operating a primitive flour mill to process small amounts of wheat that were being produced in the district. Horses to drive the mill and for transport, some beef stock, and the nucleus of a dairy herd, to be developed as their land was cleared, were what they needed.

In his old age Edmund Oscar Palmer described Kaikoura as he first saw it in 1866 as a young man of 20:³¹

It was in its primitive state, covered with a dense crop of vegetation viz toi toi, flax, bulrush, niggerheads, fern, tutu, cutty grass, koromiko and many of the bush shrubs, on the edge of the small streams, which flowed very slowly, and left the whole place covered with water and bogs of a very soft nature. In many places you could push a pole into the bogs for 15 feet or more in depth before reaching anything solid. Even the small gullies running into the Ludstone Block were impassable for traffic, therefore the only means of getting round to the drier land on the slopes of Mt Fyffe and the Kowhai was over the Peninsula, round the South Bay, and up the Kowhai River, or up the beach nearer the sea than the present road runs, and part of the way on the sand near the sea as far as Harnett's Creek. From this point up past Inglis's house, thence along a break in the bush to the Waimanariri, above the Postman's Road, crossing over Ward's Creek above where Mr John Taylor's house now stands, crossing the School Road near the Presbyterian Church (this was at the north west corner of the junction of Schoolhouse and Red Swamp Roads) thence above the line of the road to the English Church, crossing Garrett's land to the Kowhai crossing.

This track is marked on the map on page 4.



Edmund Oscar Palmer was to marry Elizabeth Morrison. Their marriage is advertised in the *Kaikoura Herald* 20 Aug 1870: 'On the 17 instant at the Registrar's Office Kaikoura by J Goodall Esq. Registrar for the district, Mr E.O. Palmer to Miss Elizabeth Morrison, both of Kaikoura.'

OSCAR PALMER #31, AGED ABOUT 55

As earlier stated, Oscar and his family moved to *Brentwood* in 1882. He remained there until about 1902 when he passed *Brentwood* over to his son Edmund Sutherland Palmer. In 1897 Charles Oscar Palmer had drawn by ballot a small grazing run in a Hundalee subdivision, 1410 acres on a 21-year lease. This block bordered on the Kahutara. It was to this block that Oscar moved from *Brentwood*. He did not remain there long. He suspected his neighbours were stealing his stock and his wife never liked the place. He sold out and built himself a new home complete with attractive landscaped gardens at the junction of the Mt Fyffe and Ludstone Roads, marked X on my map. He called it *Kohanga* which translated means a nest. He also owned the land on which the present Kaikoura Golf Course is sited. It was farmed by his son Alexander. When Dr Withers approached him to induce him to sell the land for a golf course he agreed subject to a private arrangement with Dr Withers that Dr Withers would always attend him in his home and never have him moved to hospital. He died in his home in 1935.

Oscar and Elizabeth produced a large family, 7 boys and 1 girl and from accounts from various members of the family he kept a fairly tight patriarchal control over his family. As his sons grew towards manhood they drew land sections in various ballots, e.g.:

Hundalee Settlement Sect 4 420 acres	23 Sep 1897 E.S. Palmer	ORP
Hundalee Small Grazing Runs Run No 88 1410 acres	23 Sep 1897 C.O. Palmer	rent per acre 6 3/4d
Puhi Puhi Block Sect 3 640 acres	11 May 1899 Glenburn Palmer	LIP

THE TWENTIETH CENTURY BRINGS FAMILY DISPERSAL [IVAN]

Apparently Oscar disposed of the sections as he saw fit, no doubt provided finance and held any title. Robert was despatched to Hundalee section 4 drawn in the name of E.S. Palmer. Edmund Sutherland was to go to *Brentwood*, and Charles Oscar to the Mt Fyffe section west of *Brentwood* near Lukes Creek. The 1907 Palmer family picnic photograph, page 46, was taken near the site of Charles Oscar Palmer's home. During our talk with the Hemingway brothers, they made the comment that Oscar owned a substantial number of farm sections. Glenburn farmed a section on Schoolhouse Road (L on map, page 4) and Alexander farmed a section on the present golf course (K on map). Another son William occupied land on the banks of Lukes Creek (D on map) opposite the home of Charles Palmer, but he married and some years later went to Ahaura on the West Coast.

I have not traced the source of Edmund Sutherland Palmer's middle name. Sutherland does not occur in any other Palmer name, so I am inclined to think it came from Daniel Morrison's family. Perhaps it was the maiden name of his mother, or his Scottish birthplace.

[MS] Educating their children was a problem for pioneer settlers because of the small and widely scattered population. The first schoolhouse was built "beyond Ludstone on the road to the Kowhai"²⁸ in 1865, a site chosen to suit both town and suburban (farming) families. It closed about 1873. In 1876, new town and suburban schools were opened, the latter in Schoolhouse Road. In 1903 the Town school became a District High School. A Catholic School operated in Ludstone Road from 1883 and was well supported, including by Church of England Palmers looking for quality tuition at a convenient distance. St Josephs pupils included #121f Andrew 1922-25, #129 Annie 1900, #123b Kathleen 1907, #123c Lena 1907, #123d Frank 1909.³⁵



BILL PALMER #126 AGED ABOUT 19



ANNIE PALMER #129 AGED ABOUT 12

Oscar's daughter Annie did not marry and lived with her father at Kohanga until his death. She was sent to Girton College, a private school for young ladies in Latimer Square, Christchurch. Her niece, Rita Guard, has her school prizes. She is remembered for her musical talent, particularly her ability as a singer. She was also a capable artist.



PALMER PICNIC XMAS 1907 "Uncle Charlie's" property under Mt Fyffe and close to Luke's Creek
 Taken by Oscar's brother Robert, it includes all of Elizabeth and Oscar's descendants and their spouses
 at that date. [copied for distribution in 1973]

Back Row: Alexander, Elizabeth (Mother), Minnie holding Hubert, Annie holding Lily, Oscar (Father),
 Robert holding Harold, Glenburn, William, Philip

Front Row: Charlie holding Polly, Elsie holding baby Elsie, Edith, Edmund "Ted" holding Faith, Lyford in
 front of Kate, Eddie, Nellie, Frank, Lena holding Mack



KAIKOURA SUBURBAN SCHOOL 1912

Faith Palmer seated on the grass at front, 4th from right. Her cousin Polly Palmer is next to her, 5th from right.

Oscar Palmer was interested in local body affairs. His father Charles had been a foundation member of the Kaikoura Road Board in 1870.²⁸ [Correction: The C Palmer listed among the members present at the first meeting of the Kaikoura Road and Education Board, on 1 December 1870 could not have been Charles Palmer senior, who died 23 June 1870. This must have been his son, Charles Webber Palmer, whose resignation from the Board is discussed on page 41.]

Oscar's special interest was the Hospital. He was a member of the North Canterbury Hospital Board and is reported to have driven in his gig to Christchurch to attend the meetings. In 1910 he stirred public opinion in Kaikoura to renewed efforts to secure their own hospital and these efforts came to fruition with the opening of the Kaikoura Hospital in June 1912. He was also a member of the Kaikoura County Council from 1904 - 1911.

The centenary of the Kaikoura Dairy Company was the subject of a radio interview with historian Murray Boyd on 28 May 1994, during which he stated "the first dairy farming family in Kaikoura were the Palmers who drove 4 shorthorn heifers and a bull overland from Nelson in the 1860s." He continued by mentioning other dairy farming families, including his own Boyds, and the setting up of the Dairy factory in 1894. Oscar Palmer was among the Provisional Directors present at a meeting held in April 1894.

His wife Elizabeth died in 1914, and Oscar in 1935. They are buried in the churchyard of St James Anglican Church, Kowhai.



CENTENNIAL GATHERING, ST JAMES CHURCH, KOWHAI, KAIKOURA 1ST APRIL 1974
Faith Skipworth is the white-haired lady looking over the Vicar's right shoulder



EDMUND SUTHERLAND PALMER #121 AGED ABOUT 30

Oscar's eldest son, Edmund Sutherland Palmer, known as Ted, farmed *Brentwood* until 1920 when he leased it to George Wilson and later to Frank, son of Glenburn Palmer. Frank Palmer ultimately bought it. Ted moved to a smaller farm further down the Mt Fyffe Road marked B on my map. He it was who found a stone mere, which turned out to have special archaeological interest. He found it in Lukes Creek about 1914 at a spot marked Z on my map. He later sold it to Frank Bullen who sold it to Raymond Gibson from whom the Canterbury Museum purchased it in 1973 for about \$2000. Refer to appendix 5 page [93](#).



**FAMILY GET-TOGETHER: GRANDPARENTS, SON, DAUGHTER-IN-LAW, DAUGHTER, AND 4 GRANDCHILDREN
LEFT TO RIGHT: JOHN SKIPWORTH, ANDREW PALMER, RICHARD PALMER, NANCY PALMER NEE BLACK, SANDRA
PALMER, FAITH SKIPWORTH NEE PALMER, JUDITH SKIPWORTH, TED PALMER, EDIE PALMER NEE GILL**



LUKES CREEK MERE ON DISPLAY IN 2019, CANTERBURY MUSEUM

About 1928 the family moved to Christchurch. Ted Palmer was always interested in trees and planted many about his home. An interesting clump still survives. As you drive north along the Beach Road you pass on your left a group of weeping willows. These he planted when a boy. They are marked on the map, page 4, at a point marked W.

He had married Edith Alice Gill in 1902, lovingly known to me and her seven grandchildren as Nana, otherwise as Edie. She also was descended from early pioneer families who made their homes in Nelson, Marlborough and Kaikoura. Her grandfather, Thomas Lyford, born in England in 1828, arrived in Nelson with his parents in 1842. He married Sarah Richardson who arrived in Nelson with her parents on the Fifeshire in 1842. In 1862 he took over the Clarence Accommodation House and Ferry.



COACH ABOUT TO LEAVE CLARENCE ACCOMMODATION HOUSE FOR KEKERENGU, 1892

In 1902 Kaikoura was still an isolated community and remained so for many years, depending on the same pioneer skills and fortitude as in earlier years. Nana was a capable pioneer woman, able to play her full part in the working day of farm life. She was a proficient horsewoman, and possessed the ability and artistic sensitivity to develop an attractive home and garden. She has left us many examples of her beautiful handwork. In her later years she was ever ready to help her sons and daughter in the early stages of their married lives and later still was able to help her granddaughter Judith in her early married life. My own parents were indebted to her for wonderful support during a period of serious illness. Her grandchildren adored her.

Nana would have had to work very hard when her babies were being born and that may have taken some part in the deaths of four of them. There was only one doctor to serve from the Clarence to the Conway by horse and gig, no telephone and for most of the period no hospital.

Fay's ancestors all arrived in New Zealand, either Nelson or Wellington, in the earliest and now famous immigrant ships, the *Fifeshire*, the *Mary Ann*, the *Phoebe*, the *Aurora*, the *Oriental*. On these ships were her eight great grandparents and six of her great, great grandparents, all in New Zealand by 1842 or early 1843. Another great, great grandparent came to New Zealand a few years later. Fay must be one of the best qualified New Zealanders for membership of an early settlers association.

Today when I look at the Kaikoura farms, 50 acres, they look too small. It was probably a different story 110 years ago - 50 bush and forest covered acres, or 50 acres of swamp. To carve a home out of such areas and to provide a living for a family was sufficient to absorb the full energy of any settler and his family.

I have discussed the Palmer families with Fay and with Elsie Palmer, daughter of Charles Oscar Palmer, and in their opinion the Palmers were not really farmers by background, training or interest. I got a very interesting comment from the Hemingway brothers who agreed that "the Palmers were not farmers, they were too clever." They were there from the earliest days and one might expect them to have acquired some good land. Edmund Oscar did hold many pieces of

land, but for some combination of reasons life on these farms was not sufficiently attractive to bind the family to the land. Edmund Oscar was the only son of Charles Palmer to farm in Kaikoura throughout his life. Of his seven sons, four worked farms in Kaikoura until their retirement. But in the next generation none of the boys remained on farms in Kaikoura and since 1950 no-one carrying the Palmer name remains a farmer in the Kaikoura district, Jim Palmer, son of Charles Oscar Palmer, being the last of the Kaikoura Palmers. Parents realised the limited possibilities for their children in Kaikoura and moved to town, or the younger members left to seek employment elsewhere.

Fyffe Palmer (#122c) purchased 20 acres on Mt Fyffe. He has presented this land to the government and it has been gazetted as the Fyffe Palmer Scenic Reserve. He had spent his boyhood in the area and has happy recollections of those days. This will preserve the Palmer name in the district.



FYFFE PALMER SCENIC RESERVE 1975

Fyffe Palmer at back, with his cousin Fay (Palmer) Skipworth next to him. In front are her son John and daughter-in-law Mary Skipworth, and three grandsons, Ian and Jeremy Skipworth and Paul Moulder

Kaikoura is a beautiful place - stand on the peninsula, look north, look south, on a clear winter day look north across the azure blue bay with 9,000 ft snow-capped mountains rising sheer out of the sea - there are few views of equal beauty. The children grew up in a wonderful natural environment - and some have returned to live out their retirement in the surroundings of their childhood days.

I feel I must add a final note on Salome Wayland (#35), remember she was the daughter of Charles Palmer. Born in 1854, she married Francis Pallisier Wayland. He was to die in 1885 leaving Salome a widow with four young daughters. Fifty-seven years of widowhood lay ahead of her. In January 1974 we visited her old home, a two-storey house on the north side of Hawthorne Road, a short distance from the main road north. It was occupied by the Lamonts. It is surrounded by a garden which contains Kauris and Totaras and still retains an old-world atmosphere. In its heyday it must have been a very gracious home. One of the daughters married a Pettengill and their son is an electrician in Cheviot. Another daughter married Thomas Hitchcock. The Palmers of today owe a debt to Salome for without her *Press* article in 1940 most of their history would now be gone. With them I say, "*Thank you, Salome.*"

So, all you Palmers of today write something about your family history to pass to your children - and make sure you have purchased *Kaikoura - A History of the District* by J.M. Sherrard to pass on to at least one of your children.

I.H. Skipworth, 5 Westburn Terrace, Christchurch.
20th May 1975

PART 2: FAMILY REGISTER - PALMER OF BRAMFORD [MARY]

Five Generations descended from James Palmer, circa 1750-1811, of Bramford, Suffolk, U.K.

Each family member's profile starts with their reference number

Second, in bold, is their full name, including any nickname

Third, italicised and bracketed, their father, grandfather, etc are listed, each with their reference number in superscript

Fourth, birth, death and burial details, and brief biographical information

Fifth, marriage details followed by number of children and reference numbers leading to descendant profiles

FIRST GENERATION

1. **James PALMER** was born about 1750 and buried, age 60, on 4 Apr 1811 in Bramford, Suffolk, UK.⁶

James first married **Elizabeth** about 1770. She was buried on 18 Mar 1777 in Bramford.⁶
James and Elizabeth had 3 children, none of whom survived infancy, ##2-4 below.

James, a widower, next married **Susan HAXELL** by banns on 29 Sep 1778 in Bramford.⁶
Susan was born in 1757 and was buried on 1 May 1825 in Bramford.⁶
James and Susan had 5 children, ## 5-9 below.

NOTE:

FamilySearch Family Tree shows James Palmer's father as Samuel Palmer [GS4G-6WR] who, with a wife Ann, had children baptised at Bramford. The problem is that no record has been found for a son called James.

FindMyPast have a baptism for James son of James and Ann Palmer on 12 Apr 1751, but no location is stated. Further investigation awaits online access to scanned early Suffolk registers.

SECOND GENERATION (CHILDREN)

2. **Elizabeth PALMER** (*James*¹) daughter of James and Elizabeth, was christened on 14 Mar 1773 in Bramford and was buried there (an infant) on 17 Mar 1773.⁶

3. **James PALMER** (*James*¹) son of James and Elizabeth, was christened on 7 Aug 1774 in Bramford, and was buried there (an infant) on 10 Aug 1774.⁶

4. **James PALMER** (*James*¹) son of James and Elizabeth, was christened on 9 Jul 1775 in Bramford and buried there (an infant) on 26 Oct 1777.⁶

5. **James PALMER** (*James*¹) son of James and Susan, was christened on 5 Sep 1779 in Bramford.⁶

6. **John PALMER** (*James*¹) son of James and Susan, was christened on 18 Apr 1783 in Bramford, and died there on 20 Aug 1847 aged 64.⁶

1841: census Bramford, Paper Mill Lane, (ages of adults rounded down to nearest 5 years)³²

John Palmer ag lab age 55, Miriam Palmer age 45, Robert Palmer age 5, all born in county.

1847: Inquest - at Bramford, on the body of John Palmer aged 64 years, servant in husbandry to Mr Robert Mumford. Whilst imprudently riding on the shafts of an empty wagon, he fell to the ground, and the wheels passing over him, crushed his spine so severely that he died on the spot. Verdict "Accidental death." He had been in the employ of Mr Mumford's family for the last 30 years.³³ Miriam's letter page 14 provides a more intimate account of this accident.

John married **Miriam VINSON** on 20 Feb 1814 in Ipswich St Matthew, Suffolk, UK.⁸ (Bramford is 2 miles from Ipswich.) Miriam died aged 74 on 8 Mar 1866 in Waimea West, Nelson. Miriam's birth and marriage records are discussed on page 13. John and Miriam had 7 children, ## 10-16 below.

7. **Samuel PALMER** (*James*¹) son of James and Susannah (late HAXELL), was baptised on 3 Apr 1786 (tax paid 8d.) and received into the church on October 15th in Bramford.⁶ Another Samuel, probably a cousin, son of Samuel and Hannah was baptised in Bramford in 1791. One or both married and had children in Bramford, but it seems impossible to say which is which.

8. **Susan PALMER** (*James*¹) daughter of James and Susan his wife (late HAXELL) was christened on 7 Mar 1790 in Bramford.⁶

9. **Jonathon PALMER** (*James*¹) son of James and Susan HAXELL, was christened on 22 Oct 1791 in Bramford.⁶ Jonathon, a labourer, married Sarah and had 7 children in Bramford between 1822 and 1836. No attempt had been made to identify his descendants.

THIRD GENERATION (GRANDCHILDREN)

10. Henry PALMER (*John*⁶, *James*¹) son of John Palmer, labourer and Miriam, was born on 21 Mar 1815 and christened on 16 Apr 1815 in Bramford, Suffolk, UK. He died on 4 Nov 1871 in the Infirmary Sydney, Australia, 2 days in hospital, *morbis cordis*, aged 56, occupation gardener. He was buried at Haslems Creek, C of E, later known as Rookwood cemetery. Parents John and Miriam Palmer, Informant H Palmer, son of deceased, born England, 30 years in NSW, married London, aged 24 to Sarah Ann KETTLE, living children 1 male, funeral witnesses **Stephen Palmer, T W Palmer** – could this be the informant's wife?

1839: marriage to Sarah Ann Kettle in Bloomsbury, London.

1841 approx. date of arrival in NSW, calculated from death record

1841 Census NSW: Palmer Henry, Return # 20; Residence: McDonald River, Wollombi, County Northumberland; item ID: [X951;] Page 123; Reel No 2223. [This was the only Henry Palmer in that census, but no proof this is the correct person.]

1841-42: Operating trading vessel across Tasman to New Zealand, taking cattle and bringing back flax. Also trading with the Pacific Islands.

Pre 1847: Sister Salome reported correspondence with Henry in letter to her mother.

1871: Henry's death advertised in *Nelson Examiner* 13 Dec 1871 page 8: "On November 4 at Sydney, New South Wales, of heart disease, Mr Henry Palmer, brother of Mr John Palmer, Waimea West Hotel."

No Palmer births registered in England between 1838 and 1842 with mother = Kettle, suggesting any children were born in NSW.

Only 2 death registrations in NSW for Sarah A Palmer 1841-1871, both in 1856.

2 Birth registrations for H Palmer with parents Henry and Sarah, in NSW: Henry and Henry W both 1858, conflicting with suggestion that Sarah may have died in 1856.

Henry married **Sarah Ann KETTLE** of whom nothing further is presently known, in March quarter 1839 in Bloomsbury R.D., London UK. Sarah's family was known to the Palmers in Bramford, refer Miriam's letter to Salome. Henry had one son who survived him, #17 below, possibly other children who did not survive.

11. John PALMER (*John*⁶, *James*¹) son of John Palmer and Miriam was christened (private) on 2 Nov 1816 in Bramford. He died on 10 Aug 1898 in Waimea West, Nelson at age 81, and was buried at St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson.

Aspects of John's life are covered elsewhere in this document:

Part 1, page **24**: *John Palmer, of the Gables, Waimea West*, by Ivan Skipworth

Appendix 10a, page **96**: *John Palmer: Storekeeper – Publican – Postmaster – Farmer*, by Roger Nuttall (#111b)

Appendix 10b, page **99**: *The Enigma of John Palmer*, by Mary Skipworth

John married **Mary Ann WHITE**, daughter of Charles WHITE and Hannah, in 1847 at St Michael's Church, Waimea West. Mary Ann was born about 1828, died on 15 Dec 1908 age 80, and was buried at St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson. Mary Ann had emigrated in 1842 in the *Olympus* with her parents. John and Mary Ann had 12 children, ## 18-29 below.

12. Charles PALMER (*John*⁶, *James*¹) was born on 5 Sep 1818 in Bramford, and christened there on 18 Oct 1818. He died on 23 Jun 1870 in Kaikoura aged 51, and was buried in the Kaikoura cemetery. Charles died before the establishment of St James church, Kowhai, hence he and Emma could not be buried with other family members in that churchyard.

Charles' life story is detailed in Part 1 of this document.

I have come across occasional instances of this Charles being named as Charles Arthur Palmer, which I take to be confusion with his nephew #24. He has no middle name in any source created in his lifetime.

Charles married **Emma WEBBER**, daughter of **John WEBBER** and **Annie SHAWNEY or SHORNEY**, on 18 Oct 1842 in Kensington, London, UK.¹⁰ Emma was born in 1824 in Bath, Somerset, UK, died on 19 Oct 1876 in Kaikoura aged 52, and was buried in Kaikoura. Charles and Emma had 11 children, ## 30-40 below.

13. George PALMER (*John*⁶, *James*¹) son of John Palmer, labourer, and Miriam was born on 11 Oct 1820 in Bramford, Suffolk, UK, and christened there on **28 Jan 1821**. He died on 30 Apr 1896 in Wellington, NZ aged 75, and was buried in Karori Cemetery, Wellington, plot Ch Eng/A/4, with his second wife, 2 sons and a daughter.

1846: of Stepney, London (marriage to Rosanna Connor in Stepney, London). Out of work 6 months. Keen to go to the Cape, but Rosanna was reluctant.

1847: His mother Miriam reported him out of work again, with thousands of others.

1847: of Stepney, London (birth of Robert George)

1848-49: took family to Capetown "for a few years", also to the Channel Islands briefly (refer son Robert George's obituary appendix 14, page **116**).

1849: 26 Jan letter from Richard Woods, Bramford to John Palmer, Waimea West, reporting conversation with Miriam ". . . as soon as George returns from the Cape she intends to make New Zealand her home."³⁴

1850: of Bramford - birth of daughter Rosanna, death of first wife Rosanna

1851: census, of Bramford, post office messenger, living alone, children with grandma

1853: marriage to Elizabeth Naylor in London

1855: of Wolverhampton - birth of Emily Mary, mother's maiden name = Naylor.

1856: Arrived Nelson by *Cresswell*, fares were underwritten by brother Charles providing surety for the balance of the passage money £20 for the adults and young children, plus additional £9/9/- for 9-year-old Robert.³⁶

Passenger list says George, Mary, Robert, 2 children This would be son Robert George age 9, daughters Rosanna age 6 and Emily Mary age 1. A third child was born on the voyage. Joan Matheson, nee Palmer, speculated that on arrival George & family would have gone to *The Gables* with their 11-day old baby.

1866: of The Wood, Nelson, advertising fruit trees for sale at his garden

1867: of Lower Moutere (son's birth)

1870 & 72: of Motueka (sons' births)

1877: of Blenheim in daughter Emily's marriage notice

1884: of Wellington, children's school enrolments³⁵

1881: of Carterton, children's school enrolments³⁵

George first married **Rosanna CONNOR**, daughter of **Cornelius CONNOR**³⁷ on 16 Aug 1846 in St Philip the Apostle, Stepney, Middlesex, England, UK. Rosanna died aged 29 and was buried 1850 in Bramford. George and Rosanna had 2 children, ## 41-42 below.



George next married **Elizabeth Mary NAYLOR** on 31 May 1853 in St Paul's Covent Garden, London, UK. Elizabeth was born on 3 Nov 1832 in Bramford, died in NZ on 31 May 1897 at age 64, and buried on 2 June 1897 at Karori Cemetery Plot Ch Eng/A/4 with her husband and 3 of her children, occupation music teacher.

In Nelson, she privately promoted concerts, with the assistance of friends and family, and these appear to have been successful. A full account of Elizabeth's life is available in Te Ara, the NZ Encyclopedia.⁷ George and Elizabeth Mary had 13 children, ## 43-55 below.

A divided family?

George moved around a lot, perhaps driven by the hope of finding a better opportunity to advance himself. Latterly, as discussed by Matheson²⁰, there seem to have been occasions when he may have been living separately from Elizabeth, his second wife, who had her musical career to consider. Elizabeth's children and their descendants seem to have almost forgotten their half-brother and sister, but both were living in Marlborough. I have a feeling that sometimes when George appeared to be living on his own he may have been with one or other of his two children from his first marriage.

14. Salome PALMER (*John*⁶, *James*¹) daughter of John Palmer, labourer and Miriam, was born on 21 Oct 1822 in Bramford, Suffolk, UK, christened on 1 Dec 1822 in Bramford, died on 25 Dec 1910 at Renwick cottages, Nelson aged 88, and was buried at St Barnabas Anglican Church, Stoke, NZ, near the church hall, with a small brass plaque at ground level. She was survived by 3 children, Mark, Ellen and Lucy.

1842: emigrated to New Zealand on the *Phoebe*, with John, Charles and Emma.

1847: Keeping house for Francis Jollie at Atawhai, ten miles north of Nelson. Salome received a letter from her mother Miriam, advising her of her father's death. Salome had previously sent her mother a report of John's marriage and mentioned correspondence with her brother Henry in Sydney.

1864: birth of last child, aged 42. Her mother had her last child at a similar age.

1899: claimed Old Age Pension, age 76, 55 years in colony, always in Nelson

Salome married **Henry "Harry" LOVELL**, (1828-1913) stone mason, in NZ in 1856 at the residence of John Poynter, Haven Road, Nelson, witnesses Alfred Domett (future Prime Minister) and B O Hodgson (Registrar of Births Deaths and Marriages). Salome and Henry had 5 children, ##56-60 below.

15. Stephen PALMER (*John*⁶, *James*⁷) son of John Palmer, labourer, and Miriam was born on 31 Jul 1828 in Bramford, Suffolk, UK and christened there on 19 Jul 1829. He died in May 1891 at Talbot, Victoria, Australia, and was buried, age 63, on 21 May 1891 at Avoca, VIC, Australia.

1841: census Bramford. Stephen Palmer, age 13, servant to Charles Sareen, age 25, surgeon, at Claydon, Suffolk, (about 4km from Bramford), no others in household.³²

1847: returned from a second voyage to Prussia and Russia vowing not to take any more such work, which he found “sickening”.

Date unknown, but before 1853: Emigrated to Australia

1852: Article headlined “Doctors at the Diggings” A letter has been received from a person named Stephen Palmer, who, some time since, left the village of Bramford to try his fortune in Australia. It seems that the worthy gold hunter had earned £25 in one month, but from sleeping on the ground he had brought on an attack of typhus fever, for the cure of which his doctor charged him the modest sum of £41.⁴⁵ A similar story also appeared in some NZ newspapers.

1871: witness at funeral of brother Henry Palmer, Sydney NSW.

1891: parents listed in death registration as John (Palmer) and Myriam Vincent.

This note is attached to Stephen’s profile [LJYK-SDX] at FamilySearch.⁴⁷ It is convincing.

“Likely but unconfirmed marriage to Jean Mitchell in Australia

Jean Mitchell (1831-1881) [GLG6-QNC] married a Stephen Palmer in Sydney, Australia on 17 Aug 1853. No other information about Stephen is revealed on their marriage record. On Jean's death registration in 1881, it records that they had no children and she died at Carlington (sic) near Sydney. Her funeral notice (*Sydney Morning Herald*, 4 Oct 1881, p10) refers to their home being 60 Shepherd Street, Shepherd's Paddock, which is now Chippendale, adjacent to Darlington near Sydney. All subsequent NSW deaths of Stephen Palmers born 1820-1830 refer to the deceased as having a child or children, so are not related. Several of Jean's sisters married men who had been at the Victoria gold diggings in the early 1850s, and an item in *The Argus* (Melbourne VIC) 23 Sep 1852, page 6, quotes the *Ipswich Express* (UK) regarding a letter being 'received from a person named Stephen Palmer, who, some time since, left the village of Bramford to try his fortune in Australia. It seems that the worthy gold hunter had earned £25 in one month . . .' This coincides with the Stephen Palmer baptised in Bramford in 1829 with parents John and Miriam. There are several possible Victoria passenger lists which include Stephen or S Palmer, including a voyage from Sydney to Melbourne in March 1852 on the *Emma* (Stephen Palmer aged 25, English, miner). There are numerous coastal voyages with 'S Palmer'. After Jean's death in 1881 there is no trace of her husband in NSW. However, a death and grave is indexed in VIC for Stephen Palmer in 1891. He died at Talbot, north of Melbourne, aged 63 and was interred at Avoca on 21 May 1891. His death index records his parents as Jno [Palmer] and Myriam Vincent. This is very likely to be the Stephen Palmer born at Bramford in 1828, and probably (though with less certainty) the husband of Jean Mitchell.”

16. Robert PALMER (*John*⁶, *James*⁷) was born on 30 Mar 1836 in Bramford, Suffolk, UK, and christened there on 5 Jun 1836, son of John Palmer, labourer, and Miriam, then aged about 44. He died unmarried on 9 May 1865 in Kaikoura at age 29, having fallen from a horse.

Refer to page [26](#) for an account of Robert’s life.

FOURTH & FIFTH GENERATIONS (GT AND GT GT GRANDCHILDREN)

17. H___ PALMER (*Henry¹⁰, John⁶, James¹*). Only surviving son of Henry PALMER [#10]. Informant for his father's death certificate in 1871. Nothing further known.

18. Emily PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born in NZ on 7 Jul 1848 (not registered), died on 19 Aug 1916 aged 68, and was buried at Wairoa, NZ.

Emily married **Alfred John JAMES** on 20 Nov 1872 in St Michael's Waimea West, Nelson.

Emily and Alfred had a child:

- 61** i. **Clara Louisa JAMES** was born in NZ in 1875. She married **Edward OLDHAM** in New Zealand in 1892 and died 1957, aged 82.

19. Clara PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 12 Nov 1849 in Nelson, died on 3 Aug 1913 at age 63, and is buried with her husband at St Michael's Waimea West. In 1873 Clara married **Alfred Bridges HALL** 1846-1923, and had 5 children:

- 62** i. **William Arthur HALL** 1874-1932, schoolmaster, mar **Annie Elizabeth JONES**
63 ii. **Ethel Ada HALL** 1876-1963 unmarried
64 iii. **Alfred Edward HALL** 1879-1958 buried with sister Ethel St Michael's W. West
65 iv. **Ilma Ianthe HALL** 1881-1919 mar. 1915 **Norman Samuel PRICE** 1889-1934
66 v. **Cyril Claude HALL** 1881-1945 bur. with parents, St Michael's Waimea West.

20. Albert John PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 12 Mar 1851 in Nelson, died on 14 Oct 1931 at age 80, and was buried with his wife on 15 Oct 1931 in Wakapuaka, Nelson.

Storekeeper, Foxhill from 1884, also Motupiko Store; children attended Foxhill school³⁵

Refer appendix 1, page **80**, for his obituary.

Albert married **Lucy Ann LADLEY** on 10 Jan 1877. Lucy was born about 1852, died on 27 Oct 1925 about age 73. Albert and Lucy had 9 children:

- 67** i. **Roydon Albert PALMER** of Katikati, was born in NZ in 1878 and died in NZ 1960 aged 82. He married **Elizabeth Constance TARRANT** in NZ in 1906.
68 ii. **Reginald Percy "Waverley" PALMER** of Waverley, was born in 1880 and died in NZ in 1936 aged 56. He married **Jeanie Turnbull LUPTON** in NZ in 1907.
69 iii. **Emily Gertrude PALMER** was born in NZ in 1881 and died in NZ 1957 aged 76, of Brightwater and Christchurch, probate Christchurch 1957. Emily married **Herbert Campbell PEARLESS** who died in 1934 Brightwater, Nelson.
70 iv. **Francis Roland PALMER** was born in NZ 1883 and died in NZ in 1968 age 85.
71 v. **Florence Evelyn PALMER** was born in NZ in 1886 and died in 1937 in Christchurch, age 51. Probate Archives NZ, widow. Florence married **Lawrence Alfred BAIGENT** in NZ in 1911, who died on 21 Aug 1911 in Nelson.
72 vi. **Percival James Ladley PALMER** was born in Invercargill, NZ in 1888, died on 7 Jun 1917 in Belgium (World War 1) at age 29, and was buried in Messines Ridge (NZ) Memorial Mesen, West-Vlaanderen, Belgium. Lieutenant 511182 2nd Bn, Canterbury Regiment, N.Z.E.F.
In 1902, Percival married **Amy Louisa Ellen SOMMER** in Newtown, Sydney

- NSW. Percival and Amy's children **Olga Aenone PALMER** 1904, and **Roy Vincent PALMER** 1906, were both born in England.
- 73 vii. **Ada Constance PALMER** was born in NZ in 1890. She married **Cyril Lyle MAYO "Ben"** in 1915. Ben was born 1890 and died in 1981 in Nelson aged 91.
- 74 viii. **Christina Rosamond PALMER** was born in 1892, died in 1962 in Rotorua, NZ aged 70, and was buried in Purewa Cemetery, Auckland.
Christina married **Campbell Vincent MEAD** in 1920. Campbell died on 22 Aug 1949 in Nelson and was buried in Wakapuaka Cemetery, Nelson.
- 75 ix. **Valentine Leslie PALMER** of Wellington, was born in 1894 and died in 1954 at age 60. He married first **Eleanor KIDSTON** in 1920 in NZ, and in 1928 in St Barnabus, Fendalton, Christchurch he married **Adeline Beatrix WARREN**.

21. Ada PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 10 Oct 1854 in Nelson. She taught Ernest Rutherford primer 1 to standard 4.

Ada married **Harry LADLEY** on 10 Oct 1877 in St Michael's Waimea West, Nelson. Ada and Harry had 3 children:

- 76 i. **Ada Blanche Eunice LADLEY** born in NZ in 1878. Teacher, married GLOVER
- 77 ii. **Bertha Constance LADLEY** 1880-1930 NZ. Unmarried
- 78 iii. **Harry Clement Norman LADLEY** 1881-1955 NZ, mar. Adeline HENDERSON

22. Louisa PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 28 Jun 1856 in Nelson and died 11 July 1911 at Woodville, NZ (death certificate with probate papers at Archives NZ).

Louisa married **Francis John KERR** (Frank) in NZ in 1882. Louisa and Frank had 5 children:

- 79 i. **Edith KERR** was born in NZ in 1883.
- 80 ii. **Francis Leonard KERR** was born in NZ in 1884.
- 81 iii. **Constance Elsie KERR** was born in NZ in 1886.
- 82 iv. **Gerald Albert KERR** was born in NZ in 1887.
- 83 v. **Harold Walter KERR** was born in NZ in 1894.

23. Georgiana PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 4 Dec 1857 in Nelson. She was buried at Wakapuaka cemetery, Nelson in 1936 aged 78.

Georgiana married **Robert McGavin THOMSON** of Tadmor, Nelson in 1877.

Georgiana and Robert had 6 children:

- 84 i. **Robert Vivian THOMSON** was born in NZ in 1879-1879 age 16 days
- 85 ii. **Ida Mabel Georgina THOMSON** was born in NZ in 1882.
- 86 iii. **Robert Leonard THOMSON** was born in NZ in 1882.
- 87 iv. **Florence Emily Geraldine THOMSON** was born in NZ in 1885.
- 88 v. **Percy Murray THOMSON** was born in NZ in 1887.
- 89 vi. **Raymond Albert THOMSON** was born in NZ in 1889.

24. Charles Arthur PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 11 Aug 1858 in Nelson, died on 30 Apr 1924 at age 65, and was buried in St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson. He was a hop grower of Waimea West.

Charles married **Janet KERR** on 23 Nov 1882 in Waimea West, Nelson. Janet was born about 1860, died on 4 Jan 1943 about age 83, and was buried in St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson. Charles and Janet had 4 children:

- 90** i. **Arthur "Kenneth" PALMER** was born on 4 May 1883 in NZ and died in 1961 at age 78. Arthur married **Isabella McLAREN** in 1915 in NZ.
- 91** ii. **Hubert Howard Floyd PALMER** was born in 1887, and died Nelson 5 Dec 1964, 1NZEF Army Service Corps No 65002, was buried in Waimea West. Hubert married **Elsie Maude BAILEY** in 1920. Elsie was born about 1890, died on 8 Apr 1975 about age 85, and was buried in Waimea West.
- 92** iii. **Morton Clifford PALMER** was born in NZ in 1891, died unmarried 19 Jan 1964 aged 73, and was buried in St Michaels Churchyard, Waimea West.
- 93** iv. **Leo Monyon PALMER** was born in NZ in 1893 and died in 1974 in NZ aged 81. Leo married **Jessie Irene STARMES** in 1921 in NZ. Served WWI and WWII

25. Edward "Percy" PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 29 Dec 1860 in Nelson and died in 1934 at age 74. He is buried at St Barnabus Anglican, Stoke, with wife and 2 sons.

Percy married **Minnie Eliza ROUT**, 1865-1958, in 1883 in NZ. They had 5 children:

- 94** i. **Cecil Percy PALMER** was born 1884 and died 1948 in Stoke, Nelson aged 64.
- 95** ii. **Constance Minnie PALMER** was born in 1886.
- 96** iii. **Leslie Ashton PALMER** was born in 1891 and died on 25 Mar 1891 in Stoke.
- 97** iv. **Hilda Patience PALMER** was born in NZ in 1901.
- 98** v. **David William PALMER** was born in NZ in 1903.

26. Florence Maud Mary "Florrie" PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 6 May 1863 in Nelson. She died on 18 Jan 1942, aged 78, and was buried with her husband at Omaka cemetery, Blenheim.

In 1899 Florrie married **David LIVINGSTONE** 1847-1929 of Blenheim.

Florrie and David had 4 children:

- 99** i. **Mary Louise LIVINGSTONE** born in 1891, died unmarried on 2 July 1970.
- 100** ii. **Ida Georgina LIVINGSTONE** born 1894, died unmarried on 29 June 1967.
- 101** iii. **Florence Jean LIVINGSTONE** was born in 1897, died unmarried 17 Nov 1982.
- 102** iv. **Isabella Maud LIVINGSTONE** born in NZ in 1901, died unmarried in 1988.

27. Louis Herbert PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 17 Mar 1866 in Waimea West, died on 14 Dec 1938 at age 72, and was buried in St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson.

Louis married **Alzier Jane Grierson BELL** on 23 Sep 1891 in St Alban's, Appleby, Nelson. Alzier was born about 1870, died on 15 Jun 1941 age 71, and was buried in Richmond, Nelson. Louis and Alzier had 7 children:

- 103** i. **Herbert PALMER** was born and died in 1893, having lived 17 hours, and was buried in St Michael's Waimea West, Nelson.
- 104** ii. **Flora Katie PALMER** was born in 1894, died on 3 Sep 1966 at age 72, and was buried in St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson. Flora married **Henry John KNYVETT** in 1934. They had no children and were divorced in 1952.

- 105 iii. **Phoebe Lillford PALMER** was born in 1897, died in 1946 at age 49, and was buried in St Michael's Waimea West, Nelson.
Phoebe married **Edgar Henry CHALLIES** in 1922. Edgar was born on 15 Mar 1898 and died in 1987 at age 89. They had no children.
- 106 iv. **Marian Alzier PALMER** was born on 21 Jun 1898 in Waimea West, Nelson and died unmarried on 22 Jun 1977 in Nelson aged 79. Waimea West school 1903-1912 Techer of commercial subjects, Hutt Valley High School. Lived at *The Gables* Waimea West, her grandfather's home, in her retirement; she left the house to Mabel's son Warren, and its contents to her sisters, Eileen BARTON and Mabel THOMAS.
- 107 v. **Eileen PALMER** was born about 1904, died on 23 Dec 1983 about age 79, and was buried in Marsden Valley Cemetery, Nelson. Last address 255 Ranzau Rd, Hope, 1 son, 2 grandchildren named in death notice.
Eileen married **John Henry BARTON "Jack"** in NZ in 1932. John was born about 1902, died on 11 Nov 1971 age 69, and was buried in Marsden Valley Cemetery, Nelson.
- 108 vi. **Mabel Louisa PALMER** was born on 2 Nov 1905 in Waimea West, Nelson, and died in 1982 at age 77. Mabel married **David Frederick THOMAS** in 1930. Their son **Warren Palmer THOMAS** 1936-2022 inherited *The Gables* from his aunt Marian. It was to have been restored, but was marketed, unfinished, in 2007. An unrelated couple Keith and Lorraine Davis took on the challenge and in 2024 the project is completed and is once again being marketed.⁴⁹
- 109 vii. **Louis Gordon Bell PALMER** was born in 1907, died on 20 Jun 1963 at age 56, ashes buried in St Michael's, Waimea West. Served RAF 1939-45, died a bachelor, intestate, of St James district, Trinidad, a bachelor, his sisters being his next of kin.

28. **William Leonard "Len" PALMER** (*John*¹¹, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born on 10 Jun 1868, died 26 Dec 1941 Richmond, Nelson aged 73, was buried with his wife in Michael's, Waimea West.

Len married **Elizabeth HILL** in 1890. Elizabeth was born about 1867, died on 23 Nov 1927 about age 60, Len and Elizabeth had 7 children:

- 110 i. **Austin Trevor PALMER** was born in 1891 and died in 1983. He married **Phyllis Ruby MCMURRAY** in 1915. She died in 1918, one son. Austin remarried **Alice Beatrice "Beattie" NUTTALL** in 1921 and had 4 children.
- 111 ii. **Ella Maude PALMER** was born on 14 Sep 1893 in Waimea West, Nelson, died on 16 Oct 1921 at age 28, and buried in St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson with parents. Waimea West School 1898-1906, then Nelson College.³⁵
Ella married **George William NUTTALL** (1890-1966) in NZ in 1918. Ella and George's children were
#111a **Ella Joyce NUTTALL** born 1919
#111b **Andrew "Roger George" NUTTALL** born 1921.
- 112 iii. **Hazel Vera PALMER** was born on 22 Sep 1897, died on 5 Jul 1967 at age 69, and was buried in St Michael's, Waimea West. Waimea West school, then to Nelson Girls' College.³⁵
Hazel married **Edgar Nelson FORD**, Edgar was born in 1897 and died in 1960 at age 63. Brother and sister appear to have married brother and sister.

- 113 iv. **Ethel Rita PALMER** was born in 1899, and married **Arthur Roland JOHNSON** in 1942 in NZ.
- 114 v. **Leonard "Russell" PALMER** was born in 1903 in Waimea West, died in 1963 in London, UK at age 60. Russell married **Jessie Patricia CLARK**. Jessie was born in 1904 in Timaru, NZ, died in 1960 in Nelson at age 56, buried with her husband in St Michael's, Waimea West. Editor, father of **Sir Geoffrey Winston Russell Palmer**, KCMG, AC, QC. Refer Appendix 11 page [Error! Bookmark not defined](#). for Russell's obituary.
- 115 vi. **Marjorie Doris PALMER** was born in NZ in 1904 and died in 1993. She married **Oscar Huntley DICKER** in 1930, who died in 1997 aged 92.
- 116 vii. **Laurie Alan "Jim" PALMER** was born NZ on 11 Jan 1909, died on 6 Aug 1991 at age 82, buried Waimea West. Jim married **Olwyn Muriel BAIGENT** in 1942.

29. Conrad George PALMER (*John¹¹, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 11 Oct 1870 in Nelson, died on 27 Mar 1951 at age 80, and was buried with his wife in St Michael's, Waimea West.

Conrad married **Phyllis HILL** on 16 Dec 1896 in Brightwater, Nelson. She died 12th June 1940. Conrad and Phyllis had 4 children:

- 117 i. **Thornton John PALMER** was born in NZ in 1899. He married **Georgina Edna TOMS**, 2 children.
- 118 ii. **Claude Ronald PALMER** was born in NZ 23 Jun 1901, died on 14 Mar 1978 at age 77, and was buried with his wife in St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson. Claude married **Edith Emily FORD** Edith was born in 1891, died on 6 Jul 1958 at age 66, and was buried in Waimea West, Nelson.
- 119 iii. **Ruby Olive PALMER** was born in NZ in 1903 and died in 1992 in Nelson at age 89. She married **Hector Frank ALLAN** in NZ in 1929. Hector was born c.1903 and died in 1997 in Nelson aged 94.
- 120 iv. **Melville Ashley PALMER** was born about 1911, died on 23 May 1978 about age 67, and was buried with his parents in St Michael's, Waimea West, Nelson. Melville married **Jane Allan "Jean" JAMIESON**, who was born on 8 Aug 1913 in Scotland. Refer to appendix 12, page [Error! Bookmark not defined](#). for his obituary.

30. Charles Webber "Charlie" PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born about 1843 in Nelson (too early for birth registration), died unmarried of consumption on 11 Aug 1888 in Sunnyside Mental Hospital, Christchurch, NZ. He died about age 45 and was buried in Addington cemetery. Refer to page [40](#) for details of Charlie's life.



31. Edmund “Oscar” PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born on 28 May 1846 in Nelson, died at his residence, Ludstone Rd, Kaikoura, of chronic bronchitis on 31 Mar 1935 at age 88, and was buried on 2 Apr 1935 in St James Churchyard, Suburban Nth, Kaikoura.

Image courtesy Helen Palmer

His mother is incorrectly named as Jane instead of Emma Palmer on his death certificate.

Refer to appendix 4 page **89**, for some of Oscar’s reminiscences of early Kaikoura, also to Ivan Skipworth’s notes commencing page **43**.

Oscar married **Elizabeth MORRISON** on 17 Aug 1870 in Kaikoura. She died on 8 Feb 1914 and was

buried with her husband in St James Churchyard, Suburban Nth, Kaikoura.

Oscar and Elizabeth had 9 children:

- 121 i. Edmund “Ted” Sutherland PALMER** was born on 28 May 1871 in Kaikoura and died of cerebral haemorrhage on 12 Jun 1948 in the Public Hospital, Christchurch, NZ at age 77, of 31 Estuary Road, Redcliffs, Christchurch. Retired farmer. Refer page **48** and also appendix 5, page 93 for more on Ted. Ted married **Alice Edith “Edie” GILL** on 18 Dec 1902 in Kaikoura. Edie was born on 27 Apr 1884 in Kaikoura and died 6 Oct 1963 Christchurch age 79. Ted and Edie had 7 children of whom 3 survived their infancy:

- 121a Edith PALMER** 1904-1904
- 121b Thomas Edmund “Lyford” PALMER** 1905-1965
- 121c Ena Faith (Fay) (Palmer) SKIPWORTH** 1906-1991
- 121d Esther PALMER** 1908-1908
- 121e Geoffrey Stevens PALMER** 1912-1913
buried St James churchyard, Kowhai, Kaikoura
- 121f Andrew Morrison PALMER** 1914-2005
- 121g Ngaire Winsome PALMER** 1925-1925



LYFORD PALMER



LYFORD AND HIS MOTHER EDIE

- 122 ii. **Charles Oscar PALMER** was born on 9 Nov 1872 in Kaikoura, died on 17 Jan 1935 in Kaikoura at age 62, and was buried in St James Churchyard, Suburban Nth, Kaikoura. One of his poems *Oh Comrade, Brother Ours* was read at his funeral. Refer to appendix 3, page [89](#) for more on his life.



CHARLES & ELSIE PALMER'S FAMILY IN THEIR GARDEN, MT FYFFE RD, KAIKOURA, SUMMER 1927-28

Back Row: Ivy, Fyffe and Jim Front Row: Polly, Charlie, Alison, Elsie (mother), Pat, Elsie (dau)

Charles married **Elsie SAUNDERS-LODER** on 24 May 1905 in Herbert, North Otago, NZ. Elsie was born on 1 Sep 1880 in Herbert, died on 19 Mar 1943 in Kaikoura at age 62, and buried St James Churchyard, Suburban Nth, Kaikoura. Charles and Elsie had 8 children:

- 122a Mary Saunders-Loder "Polly" PALMER** 1906-1994
 - 122b Elsie McLean (Palmer) BROWN** 1907-1989
 - 122c Oscar John "Fyffe" PALMER** 1908-1995 see page [51](#) and Appendix 7 page [Error! Bookmark not defined.](#)
 - 122d Ivy Elizabeth (Palmer) BROWN** 1910-1977
 - 122e Edith May PALMER** 1912-1913 aged 19 months
 - 122f James Morrison Webber "Jim" PALMER** 1913-1986
 - 122g Alison Mary PALMER** 1922-1985
 - 122h Thomas Pattinson "Pat" PALMER** 1924-2019
- Appendix 13 page [113](#)



Image courtesy Helen Palmer

- 123** iii. **Glenburn Morrison PALMER** was born on 30 May 1874 in Hapuka, Kaikoura, died on 16 Apr 1951 at age 76, and was buried in Kaikoura. Dairy farmer, upper Mt Fyffe Road, Kaikoura. Also owned land on Schoolhouse Road at the end of "Palmer's Lane". The family was noted for their musicians. Glenburn married **Ellen "Nellie" BOYD** in NZ in 1895. Nellie was born in 1875, died 17 Oct 1952 in Christchurch, NZ aged 77, buried in Kaikoura. Glenburn and Nellie had 12 children:
- 123a** **Glenburn Edmund David "Eddie" PALMER** 1896-1947 served WWI
 - 123b** **Kathleen Mildred Olive (Palmer) LAWSON** 1897-1937
 - 123c** **Elizabeth Anne Helena "Lena" (Palmer) INGLIS** 1899-1991
 - 123d** **Francis Philip Morrison "Frank" PALMER** 1900-1972
 - 123e** **Richard James Alexander "Dick" PALMER** 1905-1983
 - 123f** **Malcolm Roderick Douglas "Mac" PALMER** 1907-1972
 - 123g** **Evelyn Doris Jane (Palmer) REEVES** 1910-2006
 - 123h** **Flora Henrietta Clarice (Palmer) ROBINSON** 1911-2006
 - 123i** **Margaret Ethel Grace (Palmer) (Hayman) HODGSON** 1913-
 - 123j** **Rebecca Hannah Josephine (Palmer) CRAWFORD** 1915-2008
 - 123k** **Freda Hamilton French (Palmer) INKSON** 1916-2005
 - 123l** **Coleen Marjorie Joyce (Palmer) VAUGHAN** 1918-1991
- 124** iv. **Frederick George PALMER** was born in 1876, died in 1878 at age 2 years 2 months, and was buried in Kaikoura.

- 125 v. **Robert Daniel "Bob" PALMER** was born on 9 Jun 1878 in Kaikoura, died on 19 Nov 1913 in Christchurch Hospital, NZ at age 35, and was buried with his wife in St James Churchyard, Suburban Nth, Kaikoura. 1914 Probate farmer, late of Kowhai near the town of Kaikoura, wife and father execs. Bob married **Marianne Wensley HITCHCOCK** (1877-1966) on 22 Sep 1902 in Kaikoura, they had 4 children:



125a **Elizabeth Wensley "Lily" (Palmer)**

USHERWOOD 1903-1992

125b **Harold Robert PALMER** 1905-1986

125c **Hubert Conway PALMER** 1907-1994

125d **George Hartnell PALMER** 1913-1985

Image courtesy Helen Palmer

- 126 vi. **William "Bill" Arthur PALMER** was born in 1880 in Kaikoura and died in 1958 in Ahaura at age 78.

William married **Henrietta Isabella Guthrie WYLIE** in 1915. Henrietta was born in 1879 and died in 1971 at age 92. William and Henrietta had one child:

126a **Mavis Henrietta PALMER** 1918-1936

- 127 vii. **Alexander Pallisier PALMER** was born on 22 Dec 1881 in Hapuka, Kaikoura and died on 11 Jul 1953 at age 71. Probate Christchurch 1953, labourer. Buried with family Bromley cemetery, Christchurch. After about 1915 the spelling is more often "Palliser."

Alex married **Ellen Mary GOLDING** in 1915. Alex and Ellen had 7 children:

127a **Christina Elizabeth PALMER** 1917-1917 age 4 months

127b **Samuel Oscar PALMER** 1918-1945

127c **Rita Jessie (Palmer) GUARD** 1919-1995

127d **Lorna Jessie (Palmer) DURIE** 1921-2015

127e **Bruce Alexander PALMER** 1923-1947

127f **George Arnold (or Arnold George) PALMER** 1926-1988³⁸

127g **John Allen PALMER** 1927-2002

- 128 viii. **Philip Carrington PALMER** was born at Mt Fyffe, Kaikoura, on 21 Aug 1883. 1917: shearer, Marlborough, military callup

Died unmarried, intestate, at Sunnyside Mental Hospital, Christchurch on 5 Sep 1930 age 47, and buried in Sydenham, Christchurch. In 1917 he was a shearer in Marlborough when he received a military callup. Inquest found admitted to Sunnyside 26 Jul 1917 with dementia and poor bodily health.

Confined to bed 1/9/1917, visited by brother 4/9. Died 5/9. Cause intestinal obstruction due to scarred ulcer of the pylorus.

- 129 ix. **Elizabeth "Annie" PALMER** was born on 20 Feb 1890 in Kaikoura, died unmarried of a perforated duodenal ulcer, on 8 Dec 1936 in Christchurch, NZ at age 46. She was buried on 10 Dec 1936 in Sydenham, Christchurch.

32. (female) **PALMER** (*Charles*¹², *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born on 22 May 1849 in Nelson and died aged 4 weeks on 19 Jun 1849 in Nelson. No first name is registered for either event. Had she lived, she probably would have been named Annie, but that name was left for her next sister.

33. Annie PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born on 24 Jun 1850 in Nelson, an invalid in 1919, died on 8 Apr 1922 in Kaikoura at age 71, and was buried in Kaikoura. As the eldest daughter, she was probably named Annie, to honour her maternal grandmother, Annie (Shawney) WEBBER of Bath, Somerset.

Annie married **Charles EVANS**, innkeeper, on 2 Aug 1866 in Kaikoura. On their marriage notice, Annie is “eldest daughter of Mr C Palmer, butcher of Kaikoura, formerly of Appleby.” Annie was 16 at the time of her marriage. Charles Evans was born about 1836, died on 29 May 1922 and buried in Kaikoura aged 86. His estate was probated with gross value over £27,000. Charles and Annie had 9 children:

- 130** i. **Bessie EVANS** was born about 1867 in Kaikoura, died on 17 Jul 1949 in Wellington, NZ aged 82, and was buried in Karori Cemetery. Birthplace from husband's probate, no NZ birth reg found. Living 1919 (father's will). Bessie married **Arthur MARSDEN** in 1886. Arthur was born in 1857, died on 12 Jan 1918 in Wellington, NZ at age 61, and was buried in Karori Cemetery.
- 131** ii. **John EVANS** was born about 1869. living in Christchurch 1922, birth not registered ? Executor of his father's will in 1922, of Amberley, farmer in 1919.
- 132** iii. **Charles Thomas EVANS** was born in 1871, labourer of Kaikoura in 1919, died in 1953 at age 82.
- 133** iv. **Frederick William EVANS** was born in 1873 and died in 1890 at age 17.
- 134** v. **Frances Thorne EVANS** was born in 1877 in Kaikoura and died in 1957 at age 80. Frances married **James Grey WIGHT** in 1900. Their son **Frederick James WIGHT** died 12 Jul 1905, age 5, and has a plaque on Charles and Annie Evans' plot at Kaikoura cemetery. [Billion Graves]
- 135** vi. **Albert Ernest EVANS** of Cheviot, farmer, in 1919, born in 1879.
- 136** vii. **Wilfred George EVANS** was born in 1881, of Kaikoura, sheep farmer in 1922, and died in 1954 at age 73. contractor, Kaikoura
- 137** viii. **Arthur EVANS** was born in 1883, of Kaikoura, sheep farmer in 1919.
- 138** ix. **Constance Fanny EVANS** was born in 1886 in Kaikoura and died in 1967 at age 81. Constance married **Archie Cecil RENNER** in 1915 in Kaikoura, an executor of Charles Evans' will 1922, clerk to Kaikoura County Council 1919.

34. Jane PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born in 1853 at Appleby, Nelson, died on 23 Feb 1934 in Kaikoura at age 81, and was buried Woodbank cemetery, Kaikoura. Refer to Appendix 9 page [95](#) for her obituary.

Jane married **William GIBSON** (brother of Walter Gibson jnr of Waipapa) on 24 Apr 1872 in Kaikoura. William was born about 1852 in Newstead, near Melrose Abbey, Scotland and died on 1 Jul 1917 aged 65. Obituary Lyttelton Times 5 Jul 1917.

Jane and William had 11 children:

- 139** i. **William Thomas GIBSON** was born 16 Feb 1873 and buried at Woodbank cemetery, Kaikoura, on 2 June 1873 age 3 months
- 140** ii. **Charles Thomas GIBSON** born 1874 Kaikoura, died 8 Oct 1960 Blenheim, buried Omaka cemetery, Blenheim with sister Rose Annie Gibson.
1917: classified Home Service, groom of Marshlands, Christchurch
1934: of Kaikoura (mother's obit)
1960: labourer of Blenheim, will 1952 to brother John Gordon Gibson

- 141 iii. **John GIBSON** was born in 1875 and died young.
- 142 iv. **Margaret Emma GIBSON** born 1875, died 11 Mar 1902 Kaikoura
- 143 v. **Walter George GIBSON** born 1878, died 1878 aged 8 weeks
- 144 vi. **Rose Annie GIBSON** born 1879 Kaikoura died 6 Jul 1952 Blenheim
 1928: at Ladies Social Club Miss Rose Gibson entered a mannequin parade in an early hand-embroidered Irish linen tennis dress, evoking hoots of laughter.
 1930: gave a recitation at Scottish Society evening
 1931: 3 yr diploma for Sunday school teaching St Pauls
 1934: Unmarried, mother's obituary
 1952: Probate has date of death, will dated 1934, under £1000
- 145 vii. **Thomas Walter GIBSON** was born in 1883 in Kaikoura, died on 30 May 1969 in Wellington, aged 86, and was cremated in Karori.
 1909: Pianoforte. Mrs. Gibson (nee Gledhill) resumes teaching on Tuesday, 2nd February, at 32, Hankey-street. Special attention given to beginners.
 1911: ER of 9 Salisbury Tce, Wellington South, with wife
 1925: ER of 139 Melbourne Rd, Island Bay, Wellington, engineer, with his wife.
 1934: of Wellington (mother's obit)
 1969: engineer of Wainuiomata, beneficiaries: son and daughter **Brian Rees GIBSON** (1928-2005) & **Joyce GIBSON**(1911-).
 Thomas married **Mary Catherine GLEDHILL** in 1907. Mary was born in 1883, died on 31 Dec 1958 at age 75, and was cremated in Karori.
- 146 viii. **Percy Noble GIBSON** was born on 1 Sep 1885 in Kaikoura and died on 19 Apr 1917 in Killed In Action, Belgium at age 31. Private Wellington Regiment, N.Z.E.F. 1st Bn. Service No: 23824 Son of William & Jane Gibson, of Kaikoura, Christchurch, NZ, buried in La Plus Douve Farm Cemetery [CWGC website]
- 147 ix. **William Robert GIBSON** was born on 13 Mar 1888 and ?? died in 1955.
 1893: At school Kaikoura 1893-1903, father William³⁵
 1915: WWI 21/16 Sgt, NoK Mrs J Gibson, 1st Battalion NZ Rifle Brigade,
 1917: Army file: Mrs W H Gibson (wife), of Romford, Essex
 1925: ER of Seafront, Wanganui, merchandise salesman with wife
 1934: William (of Napier) in mother's obituary
 1955: guessed date of death, only NZ death that fits, no probate file found
 William married **Winifred Humphrey DAVIES** on 10 Nov 1917 in Hornchurch, Essex, UK. Winifred was born on 12 Sep 1895 in Paddington R.D., London, England, died on 22 Dec 1988 in Auckland, New Zealand at age 93, her ashes were scattered in Purewa Cemetery, Auckland. No probate file, undertaker records at NZSG, no NZ births of children found.
- 148 x. **Grace Beatrice GIBSON** was born on 19 Nov 1890 and died in 1948 at age 58.
 at school Kaikoura 1896-1902, father William
 Grace married **John Rendel Meadows DREW** in 1912 in New Zealand, he died in 1954 in Spring Creek, Marlborough. John's death cert NZSG Kiwi colln.
- 149 xi. **John Gordon GIBSON** was born on 15 Jun 1893 in Kaikoura, died on 30 Jul 1973 in Christchurch, NZ at age 80, and was buried with wife Margaret (no dates) in Omaka cemetery, Blenheim.
 1893: birthplace from Army file, had a deceased brother John, see above
 1899: at school Kaikoura 1899-1909, father William (to std 6 Army file)
 1915: 10/4456 1st Battalion, Wgtn Regt. enlistment, of Fairview, Kaikoura

1925: ER carpenter of 102 High St, Blenheim, carpenter in army file
1934: John, of Blenheim (mother's obituary)
1940-42: Cpl National Reserve Regiment; served in Home Defence
1973: next of kin Mrs A R Monson, 43 Heihei Road, Christchurch [army file]
Will at Archives NZ, made 1960, assets \$7500, John Gordon Gibson of
Blenheim, retired carpenter, for wife Margaret Gibson or should she
predecease him to dau. **Margaret Jane SUTTON**, later **Margaret Jane
MONSON**, who died 2008.
John married **Margaret GALLOP** in 1926 who died 1972, buried Omaka

35. Salome PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born on 8 Sep 1854 in Nelson, died on 24 Jun 1942 in Kaikoura, at age 87, and was buried in Kaikoura.

Salome married **Pallisier Francis WAYLAND**, accountant and auctioneer of Kaikoura, in 1874. Pallisier was born in 1846, died on 17 Dec 1885 in Kaikoura, aged 39, and was buried in Kaikoura. Salome and Pallisier had 6 children:

- 150** i. **Jane Emma WAYLAND** was born in 1875, died on 6 Jul 1971 aged 96, and was buried in Kaikoura. Headstone photo on Find a grave. Jane married **Frank Chevalier EMMS** of Hapuku, Kaikoura, in 1907. He died on 13 Jun 1937 and was buried in Kaikoura.
- 151** ii. **Annie Margaret WAYLAND** was born 11 Mar 1877, died on 1 Aug 1878, and was buried in Kaikoura.
- 152** iii. **Amy Eveleen WAYLAND** was born in 1878, married **Stanley Eldridge PETTENGILL** in 1907, and died in 1959.
- 153** iv. **Margaret Elizabeth WAYLAND** was born in 1880, married **Alexander GIBSON** in 1910, died in 1934 and buried in Kaikoura.
- 154** v. **Frances Isabel WAYLAND** was born in 1882, died on 5 Apr 1914 aged 32, and buried in Kaikoura.
- 155** vi. **Florence Kate WAYLAND** was born in 1884, died on 31 Jul 1970 aged 86, and buried in Kaikoura. Florence married **Thomas Henry HITCHCOCK** in 1925. He died on 11 Jul 1957.



36. Emma “Emmie” PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born on 12 Jun 1857 in Appleby, Nelson, died on 4 Oct 1931 in Kaikoura at age 74, and was buried in Kaikoura cemetery.

1864: age 7, moved Nelson to Kaikoura with her family.

1876: aged 19 when her mother died, and may have taken over care of her youngest siblings, Amy (12) and Robert (7). Her mother had made no will, her estate under being £400.

1911: age 54, spinster of Levin (Electoral Roll) Fancy goods shopkeeper Levin, Librarian Carnegie Library, Levin.

1925: age 68 spinster of Kaikoura, Hurunui Electoral roll

1932: Sale 1/4 acre 3 room house + veranda, Torquay St, Kaikoura. Refer to appendix 6, page [94](#) for her obituary.

37. George Henry PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born on 8 Aug 1859 in Nelson and died on 31 Jan 1921 in Auckland, NZ at age 61.

George’s father died when he was 11 and his mother when he was 17. He left Kaikoura as a young man and probably lost contact with the family there, though he carried the name of their property, *Brentwood* with him from Kaikoura to his final residence in Sentinel Road, Ponsonby, Auckland. Refer to appendix 8, page [Error! Bookmark not defined.](#) for his obituary.

George married **Emma TARR** in 1882. Emma was born about 1861 in Devon, England and died in 1943 in Auckland, NZ about age 82. George and Emma had 5 children:

- 156** i. **Capt Charles Henry Tarr PALMER** was born on 16 Nov 1882 in Patea, NZ, died on 16 Jan 1974 in Auckland, NZ aged 91, and was buried in Purewa Cemetery, Auckland. Charles Palmer & Co, Machinery Merchants. Father of Royal New Zealand Navy Volunteer Reserve, instigator of Westhaven Marina.
Refer to appendix 2, page [80](#) for his life story.
Charles married **Rebecca Adelaide JORDAN** on 3 Apr 1907 in Newton, Auckland. Rebecca was born in 1887, died in 1956 at age 69, and was buried Purewa cemetery in Auckland, NZ. Their son:
- 151a Charles George “Bunty” PALMER** b.1910, Bunty had a son **Charles Warwick Edwin PALMER** (Dr Warwick Palmer MB ChB, of Warkworth)
- 157** ii. **Edith Emma PALMER** was born in 1884, married **Thomas Leopold THOMPSON** 1906 in NZ.
- 158** iii. **Florence Susan PALMER** was born in 1886. She married **Charles BISCHOFF** in 1912 in NZ.
- 159** iv. **Robert James Garland PALMER** was born in NZ in 1891. Served WWI. He married **Sarah Jane BROWN** in NZ in 1914 (divorced 1920), and **Kathleen Elsie SHAW** in 1945 in Victoria, Australia. He died on 19 Nov 1975 in

Queensland, Australia. He was probably the Robert Palmer who wrote to Roger Nuttall from Queensland about Charles Palmer.

- 160** v. **Claire Louise PALMER** was born in 1895, married **Clarence Robert RENNER** in 1917 in NZ.

38. Amy Ellen PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born on 6 Apr 1864 in Nelson, died on 27 Jul 1915 in Wellington, NZ at age 51, and was buried in Karori Cemetery.

Amy was aged six when her father died and 12 when she lost her mother. Her 19-year-old sister Emma may have taken over her care. Her obituary noted “came to Wellington at a very young age”.

Amy married **Alfred PERRIN** on 27 Feb 1892 in St Marks, Wellington. Alfred was born about 1866, died on 16 Sep 1948 about age 82, and was buried in Karori Cemetery. Alfred was third son of Charles Thomas Perrin, the Wood, Nelson [*Evening Post*, 29 Feb 1892] Amy and Alfred had 4 children:

- 161** i. **Alfred Charles Robert PERRIN "Bert"** was born in 1893, died in 1958 at age 65, and was buried in Invercargill, NZ. Journalist
- 162** ii. **Francis Desmond PERRIN** was born in 1895, died on 15 May 1918 at age 23, and was buried in Pas de Calais, France.
- 163** iii. **Laurence Selwyn PERRIN** was born in 1897, died in 1921 at age 24, and was buried in Karori Cemetery. Engineer
Served WWI, died of severe influenza not long after discharge. The army reported he had a weak constitution due to rickets as a child. Photo engraver.
- 164** iv. **Maxwell Louis PERRIN** was born on 1 May 1905 and died in 1987 at age 82, buried at Foxton, Manawatu (Salvation Army). The Cancer Society was sole beneficiary of his will.

39. Ada PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born on 13 Jul 1867 and died on 14 Sep 1867 in Kaikoura.

40. Robert PALMER (*Charles¹², John⁶, James¹*) was born in 1869 in Kaikoura, about a year prior to his father's death. Nothing further known.

Salome's *Press* article, says he died in NSW, but no record has been found which fits. He is thought to have taken the Palmer family picnic photo, page [46](#).

41. Robert George PALMER (*George¹³, John⁶, James¹*) was born in 1847 in Stepney RD, UK. He was christened, son of George and Rosanna Palmer on 9 June 1848 in St Philip the Apostle, Stepney, London. He died unmarried on 14 Dec 1911 of cancer of the liver and was buried in Omaka cemetery, Blenheim.

1848-49 Refer obituary, appendix 14, page [116](#) He spent “a few years” with his family at Capetown, South Africa, returned to England, also made a brief visit to Channel Is. 1851 census: age 3 born Stepney, at Bramford with grandmother Miriam, mother dead, father living separately at Bramford.

1856 emigrated to NZ with his father, stepmother, siblings in the *Cresswell*. He is not included in the count of George's children on the latter's death certificate.

1879 bookseller, newsagent, part time rates collector and clerk to Foxton Local Board

1880s Selling his paintings of NZ scenery by Art Unions

1890 moved to Manaroa in Pelorous Sound to farm sheep

1912 probate - small legacies to 2 friends and the residue estimated at £150, to "half-brother Alfred Naylor Palmer" (# 53), establishing his correct placement in this family.

Robert George Palmer, 1848-1911, in Digital NZ:

Watercolour Painting *Foxton on the Manawatu River, 1879*. Alexander Turnbull Library



R G PALMER "IN MEMORY OF CAPTAIN COOK" SHIP COVE, QUEEN CHARLOTTE SOUND

Photo taken from the spot where Cook's artist made a sketch. Robert George Palmer was a photographer living in the area, and this is likely his work, published in *The Weekly Graphic and New Zealand Mail* 11 April 1908. Auckland Libraries Heritage Collections NZG-19080411-0021-04.

An oil painting by Robert George Palmer 1848-1911 "*Mission House, Foxton Harbour*" is listed in Australia and New Zealand Art Sales Digest.

42. Rosanna (or Rose Hannah, etc) PALMER (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born on 25 March 1850 in Bramford, Suffolk, UK and christened there on 28 March 1850 to George and Rosanna Palmer. She died on 3 Nov 1895 and was buried at Karori cemetery, Wellington. Headstone: In loving remembrance of Rosanna McIntosh 1850-1895 A devoted mother; Captain William McIntosh, dear first born of the above, beloved wife of Lucie McIntosh, 1874-1931; In loving remembrance of my dear mother Eugenie Simon . . . also Lucie McIntosh

1851 census, age 1 born Bramford living with grandmother Miriam and brother Robert Refer NZSG First Families Collection sheet MC452 for further family details.

On the 15th July, at St. Peters Church, Havelock, Mr **William M'Intosh** [married] to Miss Rose Hannah, eldest dau. of Mr George Palmer, Nelson. *Marlborough Press* 30 July 1873.

Rosanna and William had 10 children:

- 165 i. **William May MCINTOSH** was born in 1874
- 166 ii. **James Alexander MCINTOSH** was born on 1 May 1875 at Mahakipawa, Marlborough, NZ
- 167 iii. **George Ronald MCINTOSH** was born in 1876.
- 168 iv. **Mary Ada MCINTOSH** born 1877 buried 12 Dec 1877 Wgtn 7 weeks.
- 169 v. **Annie Rachael MCINTOSH** was born in 1880.
- 170 vi. **Cecil Stanley MCINTOSH** was born in 1881 in Wellington, NZ.
- 171 vii. **John "Jack" MCINTOSH** was born in 1882
- 172 viii. **Jessie MCINTOSH** was born in 1884
- 173 ix. **Harold MCINTOSH** was born in 1885
- 174 x. **Olive Magdalene MCINTOSH** born 1889 died 1926 in Wellington.

43. Emily Mary PALMER (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born abt Jun 1855 in Wolverhampton R.D., UK and died in 1944 aged 89, of 12 Avon St Island Bay, Wellington. She was buried in Southern cemetery, Dunedin. *Evening Post*, 13 Dec 1944 page 1.

1856 Emily Mary Palmer with parents George and Elizabeth Mary emigrated to NZ.

Emily, daughter of Mr G Palmer of Blenheim, married **Thomas EVATT**, of Government Insurance Department, on 18 May 1877 in Wellington, New Zealand. Her mother appears to have been living in Wellington at that time. Thomas and Emily had 3 children:

- 175 i. **William Herbert Philip EVATT** was born in 1878
- 176 ii. **Reginald Langdale EVATT** was born in 1881
- 177 iii. **Jessica Charlotte EVATT** was born in 1882

44. George Cresswell PALMER "Tris" (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in 1856 on the ship *Cresswell* 11 days prior to its arrival in NZ. He died in 1938, a saddler of Feilding, NZ aged 82, and was buried on 8 July 1938 at Karori Cemetery Plot Ch Eng/A/4 with parents and 2 siblings.

His nickname is said to refer to Tristan da Cunha, an island in the South Atlantic, said to be the last piece of land seen by his mother prior to his birth.

The tangled story of George Cresswell's family is thoroughly covered in Matheson's book²⁰, and I have little to add. It is reported "he was not a kind husband or father." He was aged 19 at his marriage to Eliza, a widow with two very young children, so was plunged into fatherhood very early. It seems that Eliza returned to George after a period with Devereux but returned to the latter after George's death.

George married **Eliza (nee TAYLOR) BURBUSH** in 1876. However, for a time, Eliza lived with **Frederick William DEVEREUX** and bore his child(ren) who were registered as Palmer because the law considered any child born to a married woman was her husband's.

10 children were registered to George and Eliza Palmer:

- 178 i. **George Alfred PALMER** born 1876. Received £100 in father's will
- 179 ii. **Leonard Nowell PALMER** born 14 Dec 1877. Received £100 in father's will

- 180 iii. **Arthur Frederick PALMER** born 1879. Received £100 in father's will
- 181 iv. **Louisa Jane PALMER** born 1883. Received £200 in father's will
- 182 v. **Hilda Elizabeth PALMER** born 1885. Received £100 in father's will
- 183 vi. **Herbert PALMER** born 25 Nov 1886. Received £100 in father's will
- 184 vii. **Emily PALMER** was born in 1888. Received £150 in father's will
- 185 viii. **Eliza PALMER** 18 – 19 July 1889, died infant
- 186 ix. **Edgar William PALMER** was born on 18 Dec 1891. His biological parents were Eliza, wife of George Cresswell PALMER, and Frederick William DEVEREUX (1859-1934). Edgar changed his surname from Palmer to Devereux by deed poll in 1913.³⁹ George Cresswell Palmer was his legal father, but he makes no reference to Edgar in his will. Frederick William Devereux made Edgar the residuary beneficiary in his will, referring to him as "my friend."
Edgar William DEVEREUX married **Cecilia Margaret SCOTT** in 1921 in NZ, divorced 1945, and remarried **Muriel Alison MORTIMER**.
- 187 x. **Albert Edwin PALMER "Ted"** was born in 1898 and died 30 Sept 1956. Received £200 in father's will, also land, tools. Albert married **Dorothy Emily Agnes SUNDERLAND** in 1925; they were divorced and Albert remarried **Catherine Elizabeth McKIE**, a widow, in 1954.

45. **Alice PALMER** (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in 1858, parents George and Elizabeth Mary. She died in 1927. Alice's 2 daughters were bridesmaids at the wedding of their uncle Cecil Watson Palmer in 1906, providing proof of Alice's placement in this family. She was an established artist who exhibited at the NZ Academy of Fine Arts in 1893, 94 and 95.

In 1887 Alice married **Henry Elis Leopold BRUSEWITZ**, born about 1854 Gothenburg, Sweden⁴⁰, naturalised British subject, who died in 1922. He was a photographer, and Alice also did photography as well as oil painting. After a successful business career, Henry became an alcoholic later in life and was estranged from his wife and family. After his death his widow successfully sued his supposed friend for "undue influence on a person with a disability", to recover a mortgage for £1000 which he had surrendered for an annuity of £108 per annum, a few months before his death.²⁰ Alice and Henry had 3 children:

- 188 i. **Agnes Mary Astrid BRUSEWITZ** was born in 1888 married **Bernard SCOWCROFT** in 1910 at Nelson Cathedral. Bernard died 1913 in WA. In 1914 in Perth, WA, she married **Reginald William HILBERY**. In 1909 she travelled to London to study piano and singing in London at Royal School of Music, and died at her mother's home in Perth in 1919.
183a She had a son **John Bernard Henry SCOWCROFT**, born 1911 Perth.
- 189 ii. **Ellenore Louise Daga BRUSEWITZ** born in 1890, died in 1935 Wellington.
- 190 iii. **Leopold Herbert Edgar BRUSEWITZ** was born in 1891, died 1962, married **Marie Ethelind ROBERTSON** in 1932, divorced 1942.

46. **William Henry PALMER** (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in 1860 and died in Nelson on 2 May 1864 aged 4, of effusion of the brain. Death blamed on severe fright on encountering a lunatic, however his doctor testified : "I cannot say confidently this was the effect of fright."

47. Louisa “Louie” Matilda PALMER (*George¹³, John⁶, James¹*) was born in 1862. She died aged 67, unmarried – of Plimmerton, on 23 August 1929 and was buried with three of her siblings in plot Ch Eng/X/612, Karori cemetery, Wellington. Beneficiary in will of her sister Elizabeth Caroline Palmer.

48. Ernest Arthur PALMER (*George¹³, John⁶, James¹*) was born in 1863, died on 28 Nov 1918 in Wellington, NZ at age 55, building contractor, and was buried in Karori Cemetery, Wellington, NZ plot Ch Eng/X/612, with three of his siblings.

49. Charlotte Elizabeth PALMER (*George¹³, John⁶, James¹*) was born in 1866 and died aged 45, unmarried, in 1911. Beneficiary in will of her sister Elizabeth Caroline Palmer. Charlotte listed her occupation as “artist” and she may be the Charlotte Palmer who exhibited annually at the NZ Academy of fine arts from 1893

50. Herbert PALMER (*George¹³, John⁶, James¹*) was born on 13 Nov 1867 and died in 1895 aged 28, buried at Karori Cemetery Plot Ch Eng/A/4 with parents and 2 siblings.

1881 & 1882 enrolled Carterton Boy’s school, father George (settler)³⁵

1883: successful candidate in civil service examinations

1895: A sad case of accidental shooting happened in Wainuiomata yesterday. Herbert Palmer, aged 27, a Post Office clerk in Wellington, was out pigeon shooting with his brother and two boys. Herbert fired and brought down a pigeon, and rested the gun against his thigh while he put the pigeon in his bag. He heard a flutter in a tree above and snatched the gun to have a shot. As he caught hold of the gun it went off, and he received the charge in his left thigh, the shot blowing a hole clean through it. The poor fellow bled to death in a few minutes, being fully conscious almost up to the last that the wound was fatal. Had recently returned from 'Frisco, where he had gone for a trip as mail agent. He was very well known in athletic circles, as a member of the Star Boating Club. He had been in several winning regatta crews and was one of the most popular men in the shed. He was also a prominent member of the Wellington Harriers, and a member of the Wellington Amateur Athletic Society. He had several good records as a long-distance runner. He was single and resided with his widowed mother here. George Cresswell Palmer (brother) was principal witness at the inquest, and George Herbert Palmer (nephew) was also present at the accident. Inquest details *Evening Post* 11 June 1895, page 4.

51. Frederick PALMER (*George¹³, John⁶, James¹*) was born in 1868 and died in 1925 aged 57. Buried at Karori cemetery with three of his siblings, plot Ch Eng/X/612.

He was an engineer in the Post and Telegraph department, tributes at his funeral from P & T Workshops, Chief Telegraph engineering staff, Wellington Motor Boat Club, Vicar, Churchwardens etc of St Peter’s Church.

52. Cecil Watson PALMER (*George¹³, John⁶, James¹*) was born in Motueka 18 Sep 1870 and died in 1934 aged 64, and was buried at Karori cemetery, Wellington.

1899-1902 Served Sth African War [Cenotaph database]

1901: In England recruiting for Govt Life Insurance Coy and visiting relatives

1906: Hon Sec of Wellington Branch of the Navy League

Obituary: Death occurred suddenly of Mr Cecil W. Palmer, aged sixty-five. The well-known Wellington businessman founded the Fluenzol Company, and was a prominent member of the Navy League. He was in former years a well-known distance runner, and prominent in musical circles. [*Evening Star* 14 Apr 1934]

Cecil married **Eleanor DAVY** in 1906, daughter of Judge E B Davy of the Maori Land Court. She was on the staff of Wellington Hospital. Honeymoon trip to England. No children. Estate over £4000, half income to widow, small annuities to several nieces and nephews, also to various Wellington Missions, and funding for a school essay competition.

53. Alfred Naylor PALMER (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in 1872 in Nelson, died on 3 Apr 1943 at age 71, a retired bank clerk, and was buried with his first wife in Karori Cemetery, Wellington, NZ, plot Ch Eng/2/G/436. 1905: Executor for his sister Elizabeth Caroline Palmer. His will mentions his piano, 2 violins, and various portraits, all likely to be from the Naylor.

Alfred married **Kate "Katie" Gertrude PENNY** in 1911. Kate died on 21 Apr 1924 at Island Bay, Wellington, and was buried age 40 in Karori Cemetery, Wellington, NZ plot Ch Eng/2/G/436, with her husband. Alfred and Katie had 3 children:

191 i. **Nina Geraldine PALMER** born in 1912, died 2009, m. **Roydon HOWAN**.

192 ii. **Cecil Naylor PALMER** born at Island Bay Wellington, 13 July 1915

193 iii. **Nevill Reginald PALMER** 1919-2012.

Alfred next married **Linda Mary TURNER**, formerly on the staff Wellington Hospital, on 28 June 1928. Linda died in 1969. Alfred and Linda had one child:

194 iv. **Patricia Ann PALMER** born 1931.

54. Elizabeth Caroline PALMER (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born on 17 March 1874 and died unmarried in Wellington on 24 December 1904, age 30. Named for her maternal grandmother, Elizabeth Caroline (Smith) NAYLOR. She was buried at Karori Cemetery Plot Ch Eng/A/4 with parents and 2 siblings.

1884: Attended Te Aro school, Wellington, 1884-1886, previously at Mt Cook Girls school, Wellington, parent Mrs Palmer Ghuznee St.³⁵

1905: Probate: executors: brothers Alfred and Cecil Palmer, clerks of Wellington.

Beneficiaries: sisters Louisa Matilda and Charlotte Elizabeth Palmer, under £100.

55. Frank Clifton PALMER (*George*¹³, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in 1875 and died on 21 January 1876 in Wairau District, NZ at aged 2 months and 3 weeks. [*Marlborough Express* 22 January 1876]

56. [Female] LOVELL (*Salome*¹⁴, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in 1857; she must have died before 1866 as Emily was the "eldest child" in 1866.

57. Emily LOVELL (*Salome*¹⁴, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born on 12 Dec 1858 in Nelson and died on 20 Apr 1866 in Nelson age 7, “eldest child of Mr. Henry Lovell”. [*Nelson Examiner* 24 Apr 1866]

58. Mark LOVELL (*Salome*¹⁴, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in Brook St, Nelson, on 13 May 1860 “only son” and died on 18 Oct 1935 at Napier Hospital. Buried Park Island cemetery.

Pupil at Tasman St School, Nelson. He entered the Telegraph Department, Wellington and was later postmaster at Pukekohe, Thames, Dannevirke and Tauranga. Subsequently he took the cable at Napier Post Office, afterwards retiring on superannuation. [Obituary *Nelson Evening Mail* 24 Oct 1935.]

In 1866, Mark married **Emily Jane GRIBBLE**, who survived him.

Mark and Emily Jane had 7 children:

- 195** i. **Emily Evangeline “Eva” LOVELL** b. 1887 mar **Harold ARNOLD**, of Auckland
- 196** ii. **Mark “Wesley” LOVELL** b. 1888, died 1933 buried Waikumete cemetery, Auckland
- 197** iii. **Daisy Minna LOVELL** b.&d. 1889 age 7 months
- 198** iv. **Olive Elsie Ellen LOVELL** b. 1891 married James Cooke PARKINSON of NSW.
- 199** v. **Ernest Rudolph LOVELL** b. 1895 d 1915, killed at Gallipoli serving with Australian forces
- 200** vi. **Victoria Florence Elizabeth LOVELL** b. 1898, d 1971 of Tokanui Hospital
- 201** vii. **Herbert Cecil Garfield LOVELL** b. 1899 solicitor of Palmerston North, father’s executor

59. Ellen LOVELL (*Salome*¹⁴, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born in 1862 and died on 4 May 1937 at age 74 and buried at Karori cemetery Plot Public/3/C/638 (sole occupant of plot). She is referred to in her brother Mark’s obituary as “Miss Lovell, Wellington.” No probate file located.

60. Lucy Emma LOVELL (*Salome*¹⁴, *John*⁶, *James*¹) was born on 4 Nov 1864 in Nelson and died on 11 Nov 1942 in Stoke, Nelson at age 78.

Lucy married **Michael CHING** (1860-1937) on 27 Dec 1892. Obituary: The death of Mr. Michael Ching, of Stoke, removed a well-known and respected resident. He was the eldest son of the late Mr. Richard Ching, who was a member of the expedition sent to New Zealand under Captain Arthur Wakefield to found the Nelson settlement. In 1879 Mr. Ching, then a member of the Stoke Volunteers, went to Parihaka with the Nelson Contingent under the late Colonel Pitt to assist in preventing the Maori prophet Te Whiti from causing trouble. For nearly sixty years he was a member of Court Sherwood Forest, of Stoke, being PCR of the lodge. He leaves a widow, four sons, and three daughters. Lucy and Michael had 8 children:

- 202** i. **Harold Louis CHING** was born 1894, died 1962.
- 203** ii. **Myra Lucy CHING** was born in 1895, married **Edgar Charles RUSSELL** 1918, died 1973
- 204** iii. **Cecil Hubert CHING** was born in 1896, died 1968, served WW1
- 205** iv. **Leonard Charles CHING** was born in 1897, died 1984, schoolteacher Stoke, served WW1. He married **Winifred Gladys MUSHET** in 1923 and had children **Leoni Lois CHING** in 1924 and **Robin Leonard CHING** in 1928.
- 206** v. **Alice Edna CHING** was born in 1899, died 1983 unmarried, probate 1983

- 207 vi. **Maurice James CHING** was born in 1900, died 1964
- 208 vii. **Lucy Beatrice Elizabeth CHING** was born in 1903, died 1986, unmarried
- 209 viii. **Arthur Henry Cuthbert CHING** was born in 1907, died 15 Apr 1911 aged 4.
He was buried with grandmother, Salome Lovell, St Barnabus, Stoke, Nelson.

Note: **PALMER, Percy**, 1889-1921, son of James and Mary Palmer, born Lyttelton, who was buried Kaikoura was not related to the Bramford Palmers.

PART 3: APPENDICES

APPENDIX 1: ALBERT JOHN PALMER [#20] OF FOXHILL, NELSON

Obituary: Another old and highly respected resident of Nelson has been removed by the death at his late residence, 27 Grove Street, at the age of 80 years, of Mr. Albert John Palmer, late of Foxhill. The late Mr. Palmer was born at Waimea West, where he spent his young days. In 1876 he settled at Foxhill, where he founded a general store, which business he conducted until his retirement a few years ago. In 1877 he married Lucy Ann Ladley, daughter of the late Dr. James Ladley, of Spring Grove. His late wife predeceased him six years ago. He is survived by four sons, Messrs. R. A. Palmer, Katikati (Bay of Plenty); R. P. Palmer (Waverley), F. A. Palmer, Edgecombe (Bay of Plenty), and V. L. Palmer, Wellington; and four daughters, Mrs. H. C. Pearless (Brightwater), Mrs. L. A. Baigent (Nelson), Mrs. C. L. Mayo (Wellington), and Mrs. C. V. Mead (Tahunanui). There are eighteen grandchildren. One son, Lieutenant P. J. Palmer, was killed at Messines in the war. [*Evening Post* 17 Oct 1931, page 7]

APPENDIX 2: CHARLES HENRY TARR PALMER [#156] OF AUCKLAND



[Autobiographical notes] Sixty-eight years ago, Charles Palmer arrived in Auckland, after being educated at the Terrace School, Wellington, which he considers had no superior. His people came from Nelson, where his grandfather, Charles Palmer, previously a sailor in the Royal Navy, afterwards in the Merchant Service, settled as a farmer and schooner owner in 1843.

Charles Palmer's first job was in the Mill and Order Office of the Kauri Timber Co. Ltd, in Fanshawe Street, in December 1896, in the days when the Kauri Timber Company's time whistles were accepted over Auckland City, the first whistle being at 7.20 when the staff were expected to be in their station, and before the starting whistle finished at 7.30 you could hear the saws cutting into the huge kauri logs that were common in those days.

Four years later, he was in charge of the Mill Order Office and, when 21, was made Branch Manager of the Devonport Yard, serving all the North Shore Districts by timber brought from Mercury Bay and Tairua by scow and cutter.

When the Kauri Timber Co. Ltd sold up their Branches, he was appointed Buyer and considerably added to his previous experience, which enabled him to accept a partnership in a Machinery Supplies Firm in 1911. He considers his training in the Kauri Timber Co., was invaluable and on sound British principles, when little was put off until tomorrow and only the most thorough work was acceptable.

His early experiences in the Machinery Supply Trade were hard, vivid, and satisfying, the hours of work were long but filled with interest, as Auckland was emerging as a growing industrial Province, with sawmilling, dairying and mining developing strongly.

When World War I started, he volunteered for patrol service and, after serving for two years as Senior Officer, Motor Boat Reserve, N.Z.F., he proceeded to London as a Sub-Lieutenant, R.N.V.R., and served in Anti-Submarine Trawlers all around the British Isles, the Orkneys and Shetlands, ending on a patrol boat on the River Rhine, in April 1919.

On his return home, he settled down to make up for lost time and, in 1922, shifted to Customs Street East, afterwards to 16 Commerce Street until 1932 when, in the height of the depression, a further move was made to 43-45 Fort Street, where the firm of Charles Palmer & Co. Ltd stayed until 1961, and then moved to the present modern building at 93 Hobson Street.

During the years preceding World War II, Charles Palmer had been twice overseas, and had obtained some excellent Agencies which proved the backbone of the business, now covering the whole of the Auckland Province and the Gisborne District, with Associate Houses in the other main Provincial Centres.

When World War II commenced, which he had predicted two years previously, he was at first mobilised as a Naval Volunteer Reserve officer, but later became Chairman of the Auckland Patriotic Sub-Committee for the Navy and Merchant Navy, and served on six other Committees, besides running the business, after 90% of the male staff had volunteered for Active Service. This job of Naval Patriotic Officer was almost a full time one as it involved the supply of Patriotic gifts and amenities to all New Zealand Naval Personnel in whatever part of the world they were stationed, also to the Ship's Companies of every warship and overseas merchant ship which entered the Port of Auckland. With the aid of Mons, Gallipoli, and other splendid veterans, also a highly efficient team of young women, together with a few losses of overseas imports and fair supplies, the firm came through the War in a satisfactory state, and was able to re-employ all the returning staff, who had been paid war allowances during the whole of their War Service. It is notable that all the surviving members of the staff returned to their old jobs and that the majority are still with the Company.

Charles Palmer considers that the help and information supplied willingly by the Managers and Engineers of his customers from earliest days, has been the biggest factor in the firm's success, combined with the wish to give service and conduct business in the highest traditions. The new Building with ample parking space at 93 Hobson Street is of a distinctive style, and a fitting emblem of 54 years' service to the Primary and Secondary industries of New Zealand.

Charles Palmer has been Managing Director of the firm since its inception, and still takes an active part in all phases of the business.

Besides his business activities, Charles Palmer has had a colourful life, mainly in Naval, Patriotic and Yachting activities. In 1898 he owned his first small sailing craft and, since then, except in war time, has made yachting his chief recreation. Up to date he has owned 23 sail and motor craft and still continues to cruise in his own motor sailer cruiser.

Before 1914 he was Commodore of the Home Bay Sailing Club and Richmond Yacht Club, also NZ Power Boat Association, 1914-1916, and later in 1924-27.

Early in 1915 he was responsible for the first Yacht Club House to be built on the foreshore. From 1929 to 1940, was Chairman of the Auckland Yacht and Motor Boat Association, and during this period was instrumental in arranging for the Auckland Harbour Board to build Westhaven as a protected anchorage with suitable buildings for Club Houses etc. He was able to effect a closer

liaison with all yacht and motor boat clubs, also with the Royal NZ Navy, for inter-club races in whalers, and a better appreciation of the Navy.

His Naval career commenced on August 4th, 1914, when, as Commodore of the NZ Power Boat Association, he offered the services of the hundred odd craft on the register to the military command for patrol and other duties. On August 17th, he was on outer harbour patrol duty with his motor boat, Adelaide II, and later developed the Auckland Division of the Motor Boat Reserve, NZ Forces, consisting of 16 motor boats and crews which served as patrol craft, tender to transports, warships, besides transfer of troops to Island camps, and many other duties, until 1919. As Senior Officer, he was commissioned Major, NZF. However, early in 1916, he volunteered for service in the Royal Naval Auxiliary Patrol and was appointed a Temp. Sub-Lieut., RNVR and served for three years, mainly in anti-submarine trawlers off the Shetland, Orkneys and Irish Coasts, returning with the rank of Lieutenant, RNVR, in 1919.

As his naval experiences overseas had convinced him of the necessity of New Zealand having a Naval Volunteer Reserve, immediately on his return he commenced negotiations with the NZ Government and later the first Royal Naval Commodore of the NZ Station, for the formation of a New Zealand Division, and after prolonged negotiations in 1924, was personally asked by the Commodore, Captain Hotham, RN, to organise an Auckland Division as an experiment for New Zealand.

This was accomplished, and early in 1925 the Auckland Division of 200 strong came into being, with Charles Palmer, at his own request, being Divisional Staff Officer, which appointment he held until his retirement at the age of 50, in 1932, with the rank of Commander. Since then, in 1957, the Navy Office, in a special order, promoted him to the rank of Captain Ret'd, for his further special services to the Royal NZ Navy. In 1928, after an official visit to the Admiralty, he returned home and was responsible for the building of the first headquarters of the RNVR, New Zealand, built at St Mary's Bay.

In 1943, as President of the Auckland Navy League, he organised the first Auckland Division of the Navy League Sea Cadets, and commanded same for the next 4 years, later advocating Sea Cadet sub-divisions in the principal Colleges of the Dominion.

In 1915 he became a member of the Auckland Officers' Club, and today is the Senior Past-president, having held the office of president in 1931-33, and has always been an active member of the Club.

In 1921 he became an executive member of the Auckland Navy League, and in 1929 was made President, resigning the next year until he resumed office again in 1935, and continued as President until 1957 when he retired. His office was characterised by his insistence on New Zealand playing its part in Navy affairs and his formation, and appointment in 1947 for three years as the first President, of the Dominion Body of the Navy League of New Zealand. During the period 1925-1956, he met practically every Captain of every warship who visited Auckland, and was responsible for the entertainment of the ships' companies.

For ten years from 1946, he was Chairman of the Combined Auckland Patriotic Societies and was responsible for the meeting and entertainment of many visiting high dignitaries, including Lord Home, Viscount Bledisloe, Sir Denys Lawson Bt, Lord Mayor of London, and many others. He fostered the yearly commemorations at the grave of Governor Hobson, and interested the Naval and Military Forces in this and other New Zealand celebrations.

He is a life member of the NZ Yachting Federation, the Navy League, the Auckland Officers' Club, the Victoria League, the Flying Angels Mission to Seamen, and the Auckland Motor Yacht Club. He is an old member of the Royal NZ Yacht Squadron, and the Auckland Club.

Honours: In 1938 the French Government bestowed on him the Cross of a Chevalier of the Legion of Honour for services to the French Navy from 1918 to 1938, and in 1945 he was awarded the OBE for his patriotic services during World War II. Other honours were the Queen's Coronation Medal and the Navy League Special Service Decoration from the Auckland Navy League in 1927, also London Navy League in 1947.

Charles Palmer is an enthusiastic Auckland citizen and, having travelled fairly extensively in the United Kingdom, Canada, the United States, South Africa and Australia, besides a part of France and Germany, is firmly of opinion that there are few places more suitable for living, working and playing.

In 1948, Charles Palmer paid a successful eight months' visit to England, Canada and USA, calling on all Principals, which resulted in valuable new agencies, besides credits of over *1,200 stg. The firm's principals in Vancouver, The Vivian Engine Company, made a present, delivered to Auckland, of a 3 cylinder, 40 HP "Vivian" marine engine, in return for our excellent representation of their Diesel Marine Agency in New Zealand. Charles Palmer also addressed the Annual Meeting of the Navy League in London in August 1948, and visited various branches in England and Canada, besides Naval Reserve Bases in USA.

In 1957, twenty five years after his retirement as Commander, Charles Palmer was accorded the rare distinction of promotion to Captain, RNZNVR Ret'd. in recognition of his special services to the New Zealand Naval Forces during that period. Signed: C.H.T. Palmer.

Obituary: Death of Yachtsman, Captain Charles Henry Tarr Palmer, father of the Royal New Zealand Navy Volunteer Reserve and yachtsman extraordinary, died in Auckland aged 91.

His life-long interest was the sea. He built his first boat in 1897 and his elder son treasures a photograph of his last boat, the 34ft motor-sailer Lady Adelaide, sailing up the Auckland Harbour with an 87-year-old skipper at the helm.

Captain Palmer founded the New Zealand Forces Motor Boat Services Corp in 1914 and served in the Royal Navy from 1916 to 1919. In 1924 he was responsible for founding the RNZNVR.

He was awarded a cross of a Chevalier of the Legion of Honour for services to the French Navy was appointed to the Order of the British Empire for patriotic services during World War II.

APPENDIX 3: CHARLES OSCAR PALMER [#122]) – SUNDRY ITEMS

Farmer and self-educated student of English literature, he started writing poetry, contributing regularly to the *Otago Witness* from c.1900.

Published work: *The Mystery of the Moa* : a poem by Charles Oscar Palmer and Elsie Palmer 1930 Auckland, Whitcombe & Tombs (full text page **Error! Bookmark not defined.**)

South south eastward ho! 1934 London : C.W. Daniel Co.,
Thirty Poems by Charles Oscar Palmer, 1964, Caxton Press

AN OLD WRITER POET. Old Writers will be interested to hear that C. O. P. (Charles Oscar Palmer), a letter* from whom appears in these columns, has written a book of excellent verse entitled *South, South-Eastward, Ho!* The C. W. Daniel Company, London, are the publishers, the book itself costing 2s net, and an artistic and commendable publication it is, well able to stand beside its companion volume, *The Mystery of the Moa*. A notice on the first and second flap gives a history of C. O. P. and his life as a poet, and makes particularly interesting reading for Old Writers, especially as it deals with Elsie too. Then there are the poems, all of definite New Zealand interest and of a high standard poetically. They include a poem of dedication - *New Zealand to England*; a rousing ballad of pilgrimage *South, South-Eastward, Ho!*; a splendid description in verse of Waitangi; a description of "the greenstone fish" (C. O. P.'s clever name for New Zealand); a dedication to Captain James Cook; a song written in commemoration of the fall of Kaiapoi; two songs, *White and Brown* and *Beside Her Bed*; a description of Anzac; a poem on Kaikoura, where, in the winter of 1897, Henry Lawson taught school.

C. O. P. is at present seriously ill in hospital. Any Old Writer who can afford to buy his poems will be helping him materially as well as gaining a valuable contribution to New Zealand verse.

From *Otago Daily Times* 7 Jan 1935 page 15 Dots Little Folk

*The letter from C.O.P. just referred to indicated that he was extremely weary having been in and out of hospital for the past nine months during which he had suffered a severe internal hemorrhage for which an operation would be required before he could be considered safe.

DEATH OF AN OLD WRITER. You will be very sorry to hear of the death of Charles Oscar Palmer. I have known his wife, Elsie, intimately since she was twelve years of age, and was once referred to as her literary godmother. The courtship of Charlie and Elsie was entirely a *Witness* romance. Over 30 years ago Elsie, who resided at Herbert, near Oamaru, wrote to the editor of the *Witness* expressing her appreciation and admiration of the poetry written by C. O. P., and Mr Fenwick forwarded the letter to the author, who lived at Kaikoura. Correspondence was thus begun, and before long C.O. Palmer gained permission to visit Elsie, and three weeks after his arrival at Herbert their wedding took place, a marriage of perfect love and ideal happiness through these years. A family of three sons and four daughters are left to comfort their devoted mother. Yours faithfully, Constance O. Frame (Dunedin).

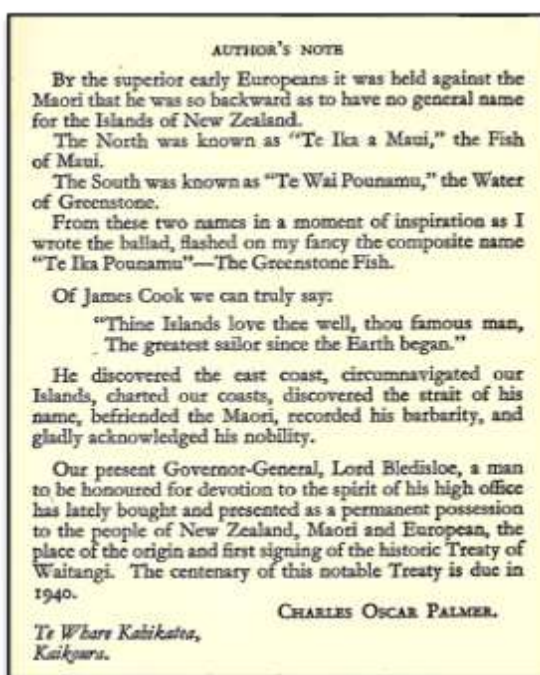
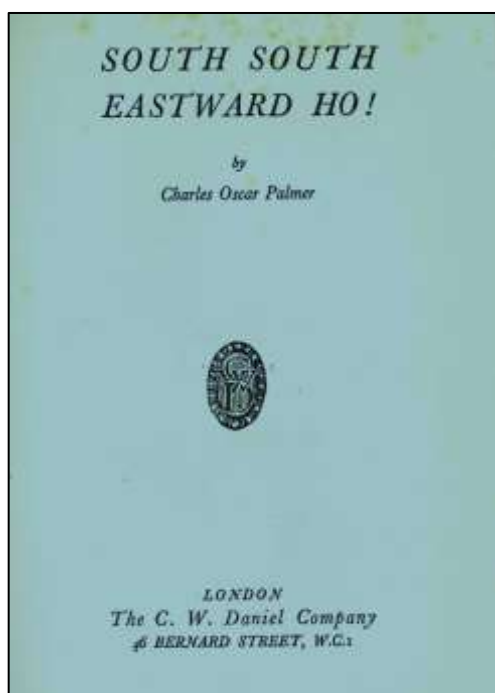
Otago Daily Times 4 Mar 1935 page 15 Dots Little Folk

From the cover flaps of *South South Eastward Ho!*:

"A grandson of New Zealand pioneers, Charles Oscar Palmer was born at Kaikoura on 9th November, 1872. He was impressionable from childhood and felt the haunting charm of the Scottish songs his mother sang. When he was seventeen he found in a shepherd's cabin copies of O.P. Holmes' *Poet at the Breakfast Table* and *Lamb's Tales from Shakespeare*. These became for months his bedside books, until he began to make rhymes. Working in the bush and at camps in the mountains, his nature became melancholy, and in the desolation of solitude he longed for the books he could not procure. At last he wrote to Mr. G.W. Dutton, a bookseller of Wellington, and began to procure the English poets: the most exciting day of his life being that on which he received the parcel containing Shakespeare, Milton, Cowper, Wordsworth and Mrs. Browning. In his twenty-fourth year he first saw a town, Wellington, and there thought Mr. Dutton's bookshop paradise. He seriously began to write and several of his poems were published in New Zealand newspapers. After his marriage, however, poetry for him fell upon evil days, and he and his wife, who shared his literary tastes, were tied to long years of labour and care of their children.

More than twenty-five years passed before *The Mystery of the Moa*, the joint work of Charles Oscar Palmer and his wife, was published. Of this Edward Garnett wrote: "Mrs Palmer and yourself have shown great skill in welding together these fragmentary traditions, and the effect is so pleasing that one asks for more."

This volume, *South South Eastward Ho!* represents the poet at the full maturity of his powers and it is believed that the poems will be widely enjoyed by English readers, and their merit recognised. They show forth the true spirit which alone makes the British Empire a whole that is more than an economic unit. The quality and skill of the verse and its strength of feeling are remarkable in a poet working intermittently and in isolation. The work of Charles Oscar Palmer proves that there exists in New Zealand a poetic tradition which should be given every encouragement to develop.



Last Poems Charles Oscar Palmer

Evening Star, 26 Jan 1935, page 21

A pathetic interest attaches to 'South South Eastward Ho!' a small collection of verses by Charles Oscar Palmer, of Kaikoura, because when supplies of the booklet came to hand from London, a few days after Christmas, the author was in hospital in Kaikoura, and he has since passed away.

A grandson of New Zealand pioneers, he was born at Kaikoura in 1872, and lived all his life in its vicinity, being twenty-four years old before he first saw a town—Wellington.

One advantage which his secluded life brought to him was an acquaintance with Henry Lawson, who taught school nearby in the winter of 1897. Palmer was twenty-five and Lawson thirty, and the older poet may well have had a quickening influence on the younger. An interesting article from Palmer's pen containing his recollections of Lawson was published in the 'Star' following the Australian writer's death. A much greater advantage of his environment was that his Highland-Norse temperament was early attuned to the influences of the austere mountains and pounding seas, which made constant subjects of his verse.

After a period when his name was frequent in New Zealand newspapers, labours of a dairy farm and of a growing family left small time for writing verse till, a few years ago, 'The Mystery of the Moa,' the joint work of himself and his wife, won the warm praise of Mr Edward Garnett, who had found merit in his earlier verses.

The volume now published—of a dozen poems—bears witness to his patriotism for New Zealand and the Empire and his interest in this country's Maori history, as well as to his simple religious spirit and the influences before-mentioned. The poem 'Anzac' has a rugged strength of its own and reaches a true climax. Charles Oscar Palmer had a real poetic gift; if it lacked the labour of the file it was no less authentic on that account; and the man, to those who knew him, was greater than his verses. 'South South Eastward Ho!' is published by the C. W. Daniel Company, London.

The Swan Song Charles Oscar Palmer's Verse *Southland Times, 2 Feb 1935, p11*

A few weeks ago, "South South Eastward Ho!" a volume of verses by Charles Oscar Palmer, of Kaikoura, was published by the C. W. Daniel Company in London. About a week ago news came of his death after an illness lasting over five months.

Charles Oscar Palmer I remember from the days of my youth—he was then contributing lyric verse to the *Otago Witness* and one or two other periodicals which gave accommodation to New Zealand verse. His verse was musical and invariably attractive without suggesting any marked individuality in idea or newness in treatment; but with the passing of the years his voice deepened, and he sang of larger, wider themes with evidence of power. Palmer had close associations with the pioneers of New Zealand's story—his mother was the first white girl child* born in Wellington—and among his forbears were men who were sailors, so that his blood as surely would

Feel their force as the smoking seas
Crash on the headland's crumpled knees,
As for a thousand leagues they roll
To lift us on to the freeman's goal

as it could grasp "the hand to steady the furrowing plough." "South South, Eastward Ho!", is a ballad of pilgrimage, has its sailor accompaniment and the salted sway of the seas in its rhythms.

A larger idea is celebrated in "Waitangi," in sturdy rhyming couplets which reconstitute the drama of the discussions leading to the signing of the treaty. Of the poets of these later days Palmer alone seemed to see and essay the great subjects connected with the history of New Zealand—someone still has the chance to write the great epic of Hone Heke. This generation has lost all sense of the conflict that preceded the acceptance of that treaty, of the Maori chiefs who debated furiously. It was a time of tense conflict, involving issues far greater than any who spoke of them:

Te Heu Heu, back where primal forces wage
Titanic wars and lust from age to age
Deep-bellowing underground, gave haughty word,—
"Go back! Go back! It never has been heard
That woman ruled the man." So, from the high
Volcanic mountains lifting to the sky

Hoarse mutterings they turned them to the sea,
Deep-rolling her heroic harmony
Under grim headlands where the beetling Pah
Defied the Maori to protracted war;
To nooks, to caves and crannies of the coast
Where the long surge in gentle ripple lost
Its briny strength Te Ika Pounamu
Stood at the helm, Tawhiri fiercely blew
With his contrary winds for passing sport
Then softly lulled their canvas into Port.

It was Te Ika Pounamu (the Greenstone Fish), the spirit of New Zealand, who led the disputants to agreement. The poet has seen the vision in that distant conflict, and his verse rings with a patriot's enthusiasm. He can always see and hear the coast and the

Crested seas and piping breeze,
Yellowy-green the brine.
Never are seas that roll like these
The long sonorous line.

In "Anzac" Palmer celebrates in fervent lines the landing on Gallipoli, a poem of individuality. There are tender moments, too, and a lyric treatment of grief in "Beside Her Bed," simple verse, but effective. Charles Oscar Palmer lived modestly and wrote his verse impelled by a deep reverence for poetry and a great love of his country. He scorned the trivialities of the precious school and was upheld by sincerity to the end. More people should become aware of him as a result of the appearance of this book—his Swan song.

***Footnote:** Charles Oscar Palmer's mother was definitely not the "*first white child born in Wellington*". She was born Elizabeth Morrison, the second child of Daniel Morrison, a mariner in the coastal trade, who had married Elizabeth daughter of Samuel Cooper, tailor of Lambton Quay, in 1847 in the Wellington Wesleyan Chapel. By that date there were a few thousand Europeans living in Wellington.

A Singing Lover of New Zealand Hears Voices of the Storied Past.

by Jessie Mackay⁴⁸

Star (Christchurch), 22 Jun 1935, page 12

Four months after the passing of Charles Oscar Palmer, the Kaikoura poet, his book, "South-South-Eastward, Ho!" has arrived from London. That an English publisher accepted the work of an unknown New Zealander on its merits, with gratifying expressions of its worth, is something that shows the Empire spirit is not all Jubilee froth, but presupposes a genuine desire to know about us, and moreover the acumen to recognise a true poetic presentiment of the day New Zealand was born, now ninety-five years ago.

For the main part of this modest but attractively garbed little volume is "Waitangi," a strikingly faithful study of the clash of island temperaments, the bearing down of old fears and grievances by the island Briton at his best in gallant, forthright Governor Hobson and his allied champions of the Cross who saw their mission work swaying in the balance of fate; the island Maori at his tribal best in fierce denial of all hegemony but that of his own savage war-lords; at his human best in honourable acceptance of the higher law of the Great White Mother and Queen.

It is strange that this most dramatic of days has so little attracted the fancy of our young poets up till now, and it says much for the calling of this singing lover of New Zealand that he heard these voices of her storied past, and gave back their echoes in historic harmony not unbefitting the theme, imparting some suggestion of the old Greek chorus in the enfolding periods of his fancy's creation, that Te Ika Pounamu personified the new-born spirit of the young land. This linking personality carries its essential role to the last, when Hobson, content with the knowledge of the Treaty ratified North and South, welcomes the vision gilding his death-hour.

“There is a destined year and morn and day,
Weary the ages are with dark delay,
When man to man will give the hand, the heart,
By far-flung frontier, temple, mine and mart,
One. Man in many diverse, One great Race
To beautify the eternal Planet's face.”

With William Hobson all was right and well.

The art that achieved the dramatic changes of “Waitangi,” as Maori and Pakeha round their diverse testimonies to a close, with the simple dignity of the climax was learned in no school but that of Nature and the great masters he studied at night for recreation after manual toil was done. Bought with that same hard toil, books yielded late what was denied to a born song-maker in a youth of poverty and obscurity. The progress of his prime, which is only partly shown in this pleasing anthology of dashing seas and lonely headlands, was wonderful. Not all his rolling ocean hymns are here by any means, but our sea-born scroll had never been complete without the pioneer verve and joy of waves in the ballad that names the book:—

“Does any old fellow remember yet?”
Aye. For how may a man forget? Ho, Heave-ho!
Out about the world away
On the greeny blue for a year and a day,
South-south-eastward, ho!

But it is not adventure nor sea-rapture that makes the main appeal here. Rather it is the strong call of a humanity that is braced and tuned by stern environment. It shows the making of a man as well as a metre-builder and ballad-craftsman. The artistic inset that tells in brief and friendly words of Charles Palmer's life-struggle to win adequate expression for the vision within him and better chances for his children is the key to all within the softly tinted covers. Earth gave him few material favours; but no word of bitterness or envy mars his melodies; the adverse climb gave him but deepened sympathies and keener intuitions, to be shown in a dirge like “Beside Her Bed” and in the ringing onwardness of “The New Era” and the Anglo-Scottish idealisation of kindly, fire-lit nights in the “Old Raupo Whare,” where Peter and Pere upheld the traditions of both hospitable races—a pleasing pastel of early Kaikoura life.

Space forbids quotation of the fine nature study of “Maunga-Maunu,” the craggy coast where Henry Lawson sought emancipation from his weaker self in 1897. The unpressed moral of a waxen will and a backward fall to the garish town is a worthy final gesture from a victor in life's arena.

This attractive London edition is not Charles Oscar Palmer's only literary venture. Three seasons or so back, in collaboration with his wife, a woman of like gifts and temperament, he wrote the charming fantasy of the “Mystery of the Moa,” published by Whitcombe and Tombs, a thing of rippling fancy that stands alone in the lighter echoes of Maoriland.

“South-South-Eastward, Ho!” by Charles Oscar Palmer. C. W. Daniel & Co., London. 2s

Part I IN THE EARLY DAYS.

Our representative set out the other day to glean a few particulars from old identities concerning the early days of Kaikoura. He first made the acquaintance of Mr Edmund Oscar Palmer, who was born in Nelson seventy-eight years ago. His father came to New Zealand in the man-o'-war Phoebe, and settled down at Appleby, Nelson, in 1844. In those days (says Mr Palmer) commodities were very scarce, especially timber. The New Zealand Company was then in operation, and eventually had difficult days to contend with. Mr Palmer's father brought bullocks over from Australia, and performed carting work for the New Zealand Company. There was no proper education system in vogue at the time, and Mr E. O. Palmer received his first instruction from Mrs John Flower, his principal reading book being the New Testament, as there were no other reading books in New Zealand. Later district boards took over the education system, Mr Bryant being his second teacher, and he was subsequently taught by the late Mr Sunley. After receiving what education was then available, Mr Palmer worked on the farm with his father until 1866, and when he was 20 years of age, with his brother Charles W. Palmer, came overland to Kaikoura on horseback, the family arriving by schooner at a later period. Mr T. Blick was the mail contractor at the time, and the mail was carried by Mr H. Lovell, the run being from Blenheim to Hawkswood, the Post Office being situated at Mr Haile's place, on the North Road. The first steamer to reach Kaikoura was the Lyttelton, a paddle steamer. Mr Palmer put in four years as a volunteer in Nelson, during the time the Maoris were troublesome. As the Imperial soldiers in the early days had to take orders from England, they could not

make much impression on the Maoris, the method of capturing a pah being by means of trenches and saps, storming the pahas therefrom. On one occasion when orders were given to capture a pah, the soldiers discovered that there remained but one lone Native woman. Later the Colonial forces were brought into requisition in connection with suppressing the Maoris, and they understood better how to attack the Maoris. All prisoners captured were sent to the Chathams. On one occasion the Chatham prisoners overpowered the guard, commandeered a schooner, and returned to New Zealand, landing in Poverty Bay. This was in Te Kooti's time. It was all work and very little play in those days. Mr Palmer and his brother first settled at the foot of Mt Fyffe, naming the settlement "Brentwood." The land had been surveyed two years previously by Mr Ward, Mr W. Poulter being on the survey staff. An uncle of Mr Palmer's had acted as manager of the Clarence Station previous to this, and knew the country fairly well. Mt Fyffe was named after the late Mr George Fyffe, who died in Kaikoura, and was buried on the hill near the Old Wharf, his remains being subsequently removed to the Cemetery. The first woolshed in the district was erected in the bend just beyond the Old Wharf, and was constructed of whalebones and thatched with toitoi. Mr Palmer was engaged in shearing in this particular shed. The late Mr G. F. Bullen came to Kaikoura in October of 1866, and took over the Kahautara Run from Mr G. Fyffe, the latter then living where Mr J. Low now resides. The first wharf consisted of a couple of spars with a few stays, and here it was that the wool was shipped by the Ruby. Mr Bob Fyffe carried on whaling operations with his nephew

George Fyffe, Jimmy and Barney Riley also being engaged in the industry. Barney's Rock was named after Barney Riley. Mr Palmer and his brother brought cattle and gear down with them, also a couple of horses, landing here on 10th April 1866. Mr Pat Peoples, Mr James O'Donnell, Mr D. Smith, and Mr Hugh Tremble came later. Mrs Abraham and Mrs Malcolm Campbell then resided in Kaikoura. Mr J. Haile's father had resided at Mt Pleasant for about a year previous to this, his mother being a sister of Mr Ward, the surveyor. Mr John Schroeder was also in Kaikoura at the time. The settlers were engaged in farming pursuits principally. Captain Keene was the first settler at Swyncombe, the boundary between the latter place being the Kahautara, Monkey Face being the boundary between Greenhills and Mt Fyffe. Captain Keene purchased the freehold of the property, his boundary being from the Kowhai River to the Conway (inland), and Mr Bullen's property from the Clarence Reserve to the Conway (Greenhills Estate). Mr Ward owned Quail Flat, Mr C. Watts held the Tytler, subleasing to Mr W. Smith. Land sold in those days from 4/6 up to £2 per acre. The late Mr William Smith had the Tytler run then, starting with 1500 ewes, two sets of lambs being born in the first season, an occurrence which has not since been repeated. Mr Smith also took over Ludstone. For the first year Mr Palmer and his brother ploughed about ten acres, putting in wheat, oats, and potatoes, and was also engaged in sawing timber for two cottages, later shearing at Fyffe's and Inglis's. Mr Palmer next started a flour mill, on the site now occupied by Mr H. Chisnall's residence, Beach Road, the plant coming from Nelson, having been purchased by Messers Hooper and Dodson, of Nelson, who traded with English firms. Two years later he sold the plant to Messers Parsons Brothers, who later removed it to Ashwick. The plant, with 42

acres and a six-acre strip was sold for £600. Messers E.G. (*sic*) and C.O. Palmer were born at the flour mill site. Mr Palmer in 1870 married Miss Elizabeth Morrison, a daughter of Captain Morrison, of Wellington. Eight sons and one daughter resulted from the marriage. After the flour mill had been disposed of he went to Glenburn, where general farming was carried on, until he sold to Mr Skevington. He then removed to the township, carrying on carpentering and the breaking in of horses, living where Mr J Prince's residence now stands. He built the house where Mr J. Prince resides, selling the cottage to him later. The road at that time from McAra's Corner to the wharf ran along the foot of the hill along Torquay Street, Cave Rock jutting out into the sea. When his brother left for England, Mr Palmer purchased Brentwood, and other blocks of land. In those days he had to cut and deliver manuka firewood at £1 per cord. The dairy business was mooted about this time, and Mr Guy Boyd and Mr B. Mackle offered sites for a factory, the latter's land eventually being chosen. Mr A. S. Collyns was the chairman of the first meeting, and Mr C. Wood was the first chairman of directors, Messers J. Curtain and Palmer being included as his associate directors. The price paid for milk was 2 1/4d per gallon, cheese bringing 4d per lb in the Sydney market. This was in 1896. Then followed an agitation for cutting up Crown lands, resulting in the land being subdivided, Mr Palmer taking an active part in the movement, as he had done in dairy matters. Mr Meredith was then the member for Parliament. Kahautara Block was the first subdivision. Mr Palmer was for 10 years at Kahautara, and then moved to Kohanga. He was instrumental in securing the hospital for Kaikoura, being a strong advocate for the present site in the face of much opposition in favour of building the hospital on the site where the farmers' saleyards are now situate. He put up a great

fight for the site on the hill and was eventually backed up by Dr Valentine. Mr Palmer also took a keen interest in harbour matters, and represented the town for nine years on the Kaikoura County Council.

Although 78 years of age, Mr Palmer is hale, hearty and active, and very rarely finds

occasion to use glasses for reading. He is a fine stamp of the old pioneer, and, in subsequent issues, we shall have something further to say concerning the part he played in matters affecting the welfare of Kaikoura.

Kaikoura Star, 2 Nov 1923, page 4

Part II EARLY KAIKOURA



[In our previous notes it was mentioned that the Post Office was at Mr Haile's property. It should have been stated that the site was at Mt Pleasant.]

Captain Pilliat, who subsequently became Customhouse Officer and Resident Magistrate, came over in charge of the Government steamer to survey the bay and coast of Kaikoura. Soon after arrival here, the St Kilda struck the rock named after her. She then left for Wellington, and Captain Pilliat remained in Kaikoura with two boats, to complete the survey of the coast. They later left for Gore Bay, near Cheviot, in the schooner Sea Bird, on the day previous to the great storm of 1868, and had to take shelter under the Amuri Bluff. The severity of the storm increasing, the crew of the schooner took to the boats, the sea running over the shore and rocks. They waited until a large wave rolled along, rose on top of it, and succeeded in getting clear over the rocks. One of the crew sustained broken ribs in the ride over the waves to the shore. Shortly after the schooner sank at anchor. She had a cargo of limestone on board. Probably the sunken vessel is still at the bottom where she sank.

The schooner Triumph, belonging to the same owner, leaving Lyttelton, arrived here early in the morning, mooring opposite the old wharf. When the storm reached this vessel her easterly moorings carried away,

and the vessel crashed against the wharf, which broke through her side, and she remained fast until the crew landed safely. The inner moorings still held fast, and the vessel rolled until the mast tips touched the water and the rocks, on the inshore side, the return waves turning her over in the opposite direction, until the strain of the seas broke her to pieces, the wreckage being strewn in all directions. The keel and lower portions of the vessel sank to the bottom of the harbour, where they remained for several years. The only cargo the vessel had on board was a ton of flour, which was washed ashore, and strange to relate, it was very little damaged. The Triumph was engaged in the limestone trade, and she also made several trips to Port Underwood, with wool, etc., the sailing vessels at that time loading wool, which was brought down the rivers from Blenheim and the East Coast stations.

The barques *Indus* and *Camilla*, with bullocks, from the Clarence River, New South Wales, for Mr Bullen, were then traders here. The *Indus* left the Clarence (Australia) first with 200 head of cattle and several horses, Mr Frank Bullen coming over in her. They had rather a long passage across, and entered the bay late in the afternoon. In the morning the vessel was seen at anchor, opposite Inglis's Creek. A whaleboat went out to show the skipper to the anchorage, the wind blowing a southerly. Those on the vessel were told

not to go past the reef, as the strong current running would cause the vessel to drift north, which, it turned out, actually did happen, the vessel drifting as far as Picton. Hay was secured at Picton to feed the hungry cattle on the way back to Kaikoura, the vessel arriving here a few days afterwards, this time securing the proper anchorage. The cattle were landed with the aid of boats, the beasts swimming on each side of the craft, with lines attached, which were released when nearing the shore.

The *Camilla* arrived shortly after, and discharged about 250 head of cattle. Both vessels then returned to Australia for further lots, and in due course came down the bay at the same time, reaching the anchorage safely, and commencing to land their cattle. When about halfway through the operation a very heavy easterly gale sprang up, causing a heavy sea. The ships

strained at their anchors that much that the crews came ashore for safety. The gale continued for two days, and the crew remained on shore until it abated, then returned to the vessels to complete the landing of the cattle. The cattle were able to walk above high-water mark. In all 800 head of cattle were delivered, and paid for, the conditions being that they were to be safely landed. The seller was in Kaikoura personally to give delivery of the cattle to the purchasers, Messers F. and G. F. Bullen, uncle and father of Messers F. and W. R. Bullen.

Those were the good old days when people did not complain of the hardships they had to endure - they knew too well that if improvements were to be made, they must effect them themselves.

Kaikoura Star, 20 Nov 1923, page 4

OLD KAIKOURA III

—◆—
Description of part of Kaikoura known as "The Swamp" and its appearance in 1869.

At that period it was in its primitive state, covered with a dense crop of vegetation, viz., toitoi, flax, bullrush, niggerheads, fern, tutu, cutty grass, koromiko, and many of the bush shrubs, on the edge of small streams, which flowed very slowly, and left the whole place covered with water and bogs of a very soft nature. In many places you could push a pole into the bogs for 15 feet or more in depth before reaching anything solid. Even the small gullies running into the Ludstone Block were impassable for traffic, therefore the only means of getting round to the dryer land on the slopes of Mt Fyffe and the Kowhai was over the Peninsula, round the South Bay, and up the Kowhai River, or up the beach nearer the sea than the present road runs, and part of the way on the sand near the sea as far as Harnett's

Creek. From this point up past Inglis's house, thence along through a break in the bush to the Waimanariri, above Postman's Road, crossing over Ward's creek above where Mr John Taylor's house now stands, crossing School road near the Presbyterian Church, thence along the line of road to the English Church, crossing Garrett's land to the Kowhai crossing. These tracks were used until ditches were cut through all the soft parts along the Ludstone Road. The soil from these ditches was placed on the centre of the road, and when it became hard enough for travelling over, gradually the road came into use. The next piece drained and formed was commenced opposite the Ludstone wool-shed, to near Keenan's Corner. These roads were constructed under the supervision of the Blenheim officials. The Mt Fyffe Road was then taken in hand, contracts of small sections being

let to the settlers willing to take land in payment for their labour. This formation having been completed it was some time before teams could travel on it. The settlers interested in parts that could be made fit for use joined together, and by using bundles of flax bound close together, over the softest places, and covered with clay, they were enabled to get along with light loads.

The Kaikoura Road Board was elected in 1870, and took charge of things. Road matters began to look brighter, as the Board were enabled to have the most urgent work done. Later on they had the Mt Fyffe Road metalled. Happily the cross roads were laid out on harder ground, and did not require so much to make them passable.

Leaving the roads for the present, we will pass on to get over farms, in order to give us something to live on. The easiest of it would take £5 an acre to prepare for a crop of potatoes, which were generally grown first; then oats or wheat. Fancy selling a four-bushel sack of oats for 5/-, or 4/6 per bushel for wheat, and bacon for 4d per lb!

Wool and mutton being at very low prices, sheep increasing very quickly, it be-

came necessary to have them boiled down for the tallow. Mr E. G. T. Gooch commenced one of the first local industries, by erecting an up-to-date boiling down establishment, erecting it at the farm now owned by Mr Frank Bullen near the Old Wharf. The boiler was a very large one, capable of holding 500 carcasses of sheep at one time. The tallow was extracted by steam being turned into the boiler through a pipe from the engine, which did its task so effectively that the bones crumbled up into powder. After drawing off the tallow the remainder of the refuse was trucked away into the sea, along a truck line erected for the purpose. The tallow and skins were shipped to market. Large quantities of sheep were dealt with at this establishment, sheep coming from all the stations anywhere near Kaikoura. Ten thousand came from Parnassus in one season. Four butchers were employed doing the slaughtering, and several other men were engaged for the after work. This industry was carried on until the frozen meat industry was a success.

Kaikoura Star, 7 Dec 1923, page 4

APPENDIX 5: EDMUND “TED” PALMER [#121] MERE FROM LUKE’S CREEK, KAIKOURA

Museum Obtains Unique Mere More than \$1500 has been paid by the Canterbury Museum for a unique greenstone mere, which was shown to members of the Canterbury Museum Trust Board at its meeting yesterday.

The museum’s director (Dr R.S. Duff) told the board that the mere had been bought with the assistance of the Government and the R.G. Metcalfe bequest.

The board’s accounts showed a grant from the Department of Internal Affairs towards the cost of the mere, of \$1500. The mere had been found in the bed of Luke’s Creek, on the lower slopes of Mt Fyffe, Kaikoura, in 1914, Dr Duff said. It was sold not long after for about \$20.

“It has increased its value since. The mere was found by Mr Edmund Palmer, and then passed into the possession of Mr Frank Bullen, of The Lakes station, Kaikoura. It later passed to Mr Raymond Gibson, a solicitor now living at Waipu, Northland. Mr Gibson lent the mere for display in 1962 and again in 1969. We are very pleased to return it to its former place in the Cook exhibition in the Pacific Hall,” Dr Duff said.

“The weapon,” he said, “was of great interest in that it represented the old South Island patu club translated into nephrite greenstone. Features were the waisted grip, parallel blade sides, and cutting edge at right angles.” Dr Duff showed the board how the weapon was designed for use as a stabbing weapon.

He also said that he agreed with comments that the Government should ban all sales of Maori artefacts except to public museums. Mr F Gilbert said he felt that this could encourage the smuggling of artefacts out of the country. [Press 20 Jul 1973 page 1]

[Faith Skipworth, nee Palmer, was asked to come to the museum to confirm that this mere matched her recollection of the one her father had had over his mantle-piece. She said he had resisted Bullen's requests to purchase it for years, but eventually parted with it for £10. An illustration of this mere appears on page 49.]

APPENDIX 6: EMMA PALMER [#36] OF LEVIN AND KAIKOURA

The death occurred at Kaikoura on Sunday of Miss Emma Palmer, fourth daughter of the late Charles and Emma Palmer, in her 75th year. She was born at Appleby, Nelson, and went to Kaikoura, in 1864. Mrs Wayland and Mrs W. Gibson, of Kaikoura, are sisters; and Mr E. O. Palmer a brother. Miss Palmer was librarian at the Carnegie Library, Levin, for many years, also librarian of St. Paul's library, Kaikoura, for a lengthy period, and took a keen interest in the activities of the Church. She made many friends in that district, and was held in very high esteem.

[Press, 6 Oct 1931, page 2]

Many old residents of Levin will regret to hear of the death of Miss Emma Palmer, She was born at Appleby, Nelson, 75 years ago, and first went to Kaikoura in 1864. Later she came to Levin, where she had a fancy goods business and book shop. On relinquishing this she was appointed librarian of the public library here and carried out the duties of the position for many years with great efficiency. Miss Palmer made many friends and on her retirement about twelve years ago she returned to Kaikoura, but still corresponded with her friends in Levin, who will hear of her death with deep sorrow. [Horowhenua Chronicle, 14 Oct 1931, page 4]

APPENDIX 7: FYFFE PALMER [#122C] KAIKOURA, SAVED LOCAL NATIVE FOREST

A well-known local man who saved a slice of Kaikoura's native forest for posterity died in Christchurch on Friday. Oscar John Fyffe Palmer, known as Fyffe Palmer, died at St Winifred's hospital where he has been since January. He was aged 86.

Mr Palmer gifted to the Crown a piece of land on which stood the last remnant of the hardwood native forest which had previously covered the Kaikoura flood plain. It is known as the Fyffe Palmer track.

Mr Palmer was born in 1908 and raised on his parents' farm at the foot of Mount Fyffe. After leaving school he went to Christchurch where he lived until returning to Kaikoura in 1962. Until January, he lived in the Beach Road house built by him and his son Glen.

During World War 2, Mr Palmer was a conscientious objector but was excluded from the army on medical grounds. He was willing to serve in the medical corp, although in the end did not, said Glen.

FIRM VIEWS He had firm political views. Although not calling himself a socialist, he was against capitalism and the idea of making money out of money, combining this with a belief that people should help themselves. Originally a Labour Party supporter, he became disillusioned with Labour about 20 years ago but did not turn to National either. He believed that politicians had to compromise their beliefs in order to be in power where they could influence society.

He belonged to no particular church, wondering why they could not get on together. Perhaps to this end, he organised a bush walk for ministers from different denominations. He often gave away vegetables to people and for church fairs.

A French polisher by trade, his expertise was frequently called upon by Kaikoura people. Sometimes he would give the proceeds of his work to a charitable organisation. He was not interested in accumulating money, living simply, apart from the beautiful furniture his trade produced, said Glen.

HARRIER He was a Life Member of the Christchurch Harriers Club and started a Harriers Club in Kaikoura.

Described as a staunch member of the Kaikoura Historical Society, he was also involved in Senior Citizens and the rebuilding of the Suburban Hall. He was part Maori through his mother and took an interest in the Takahanga Marae when it was being built.

He became a builder's labourer in the 1960s and, on returning to Kaikoura, worked on road maintenance for the Ministry of Works until retiring. Mr Palmer's wife Nina died 18 years ago and a daughter Pamela died in recent years. He is survived by his daughters Gloria and Beverley, his son Glen, and 14 grandchildren. [Kaikoura Star 13 Sep 1995]

APPENDIX 8: GEORGE HENRY PALMER [#37], OF WELLINGTON AND AUCKLAND.

OBITUARY. An old colonist, Mr George Henry Palmer, aged 61, died at his residence, Brentwood, Sentinel Road, Ponsonby, yesterday morning, after a long illness. He was born in the Nelson district in 1860, his father Mr. Charles Palmer, having settled in Waimea West in 1845, after visiting New Zealand as a mate in the merchant service. The late Mr Palmer came to Auckland in 1896, and has latterly been engaged as clerk of works to the Bank of New Zealand. Previously he was a builder and contractor. In his early days Mr. Palmer was well known as a rifleman. He organised the Karori Rifle Club in Wellington, was the first captain, and was made a life member. He is survived by Mrs. Palmer and two sons and three daughters.

[Herald 1 Feb 1921, page 6]

APPENDIX 9: JANE PALMER [#34] MRS W GIBSON OF KAIKOURA

OBITUARY. The death occurred at her residence, Kaikoura, on Thursday, of Mrs W. J. Gibson [should be Mrs W. Gibson], at the age of eighty-one years. Mrs Gibson had been ailing for some time. She was born in Appleby, Nelson, in 1853, being the daughter of the late Charles and Emma Palmer. Her father was an ex-naval man who settled on a farm in Nelson. The family removed to Kaikoura in 1867 [should be 1866] and Mrs Gibson was married in 1882 [should be 1872]. The Palmer family were among the earliest settlers in the Kaikoura district and Mrs Gibson often related stories of the finding of Maori curios, skulls, etc., when the land at her

residence was first turned over. Mrs Gibson was a staunch supporter of the Presbyterian Church and its organisations, especially the W.C.T.U. and mission work. Mr Gibson died in 1918 [wrong]. The sons are Messrs Charles (Kaikoura), Thomas (Wellington), William (Napier) and John Gibson (Blenheim). Another son, Mr Percy Gibson, was killed at the Great War. The daughters are Mrs R. Drew (Spring Creek, Blenheim), & Miss Rose Gibson (Kaikoura). Another daughter, Miss Margaret Gibson, died some years ago. [Star, 26 Feb 1934, p.9]

APPENDIX 10A: JOHN PALMER [#11] OF WAIMEA WEST BY ROGER NUTTALL (#111B)

Pioneer – Storekeeper – Publican – Postmaster – Farmer

John Palmer, born in Bramford village near Ipswich, Suffolk was a servant to Lady Rendlesham, and footman to Lady Brough at Stoke Hall, Ipswich. It is suggested that Lady Rendlesham may have assisted him financially when emigrating to New Zealand.

In 1842, his brother Charles had recently returned from New Plymouth to be married to Emma Webber and was to return on the next ship, taking his sister Salome and himself, John as fore cabin passengers.

For this voyage, John had a cane settee made for his bunk, this item of furniture still being on display in the Dominion Museum in Wellington.

He is described as a merchant and had £60 worth of goods, coffee, flour, rice, two kegs of pickled pork, soap, candles, gunpowder, tea, sugar, rum, brandy and pale ale – in the hold.

The *Phoebe* arrived on the 29th of March 1843 and John immediately purchased a team of bullocks and commenced business as a carrier in Waimea West. Charles settled on the other side of the river, on a lease in Waimea East.

Waimea West:

About 14 miles from Nelson is Waimea West which was surveyed by John Sylvanus Cotterell, a Quaker, who called his base Pennsylvania Station. The first eight miles was up the Waimea River to Pearl Creek, or Cotterell's Landing, and it was another six miles to the junction of the Wai-iti and Wairoa Rivers. The survey took from March 22nd 1842 till 16th July and amounted to 6,350 acres.

Captain Arthur Wakefield offered ploughman John Kerr special terms to take up section 129 – to break in land as a demonstration to other farmers. The new settlers – fellow Scots James and Patrick Tytler and their cousin Edward Stafford, Dr David Monro the son of a Professor of Medicine, the Hon. Constantine Dillon fourth son of Viscount Dillon of the counties of Oxford and Mayo and Lieutenant Newcombe – who were to settle nearby, were keen to learn from him. One mistake in the first year was that the bracken fern made the ground sour and the first crop, indifferent.

One settler, Joseph Ward, records that the bullock driver, John Palmer, brought news “of the Massacre of Wairoa,” – Captain Arthur Wakefield and surveyor Cotterell being numbered among the twenty-two who weren't to return. John Palmer took over the store at Pennsylvania Station and offered merchandise, accommodation and a “Bush Licence.” In 1844 he is shown on the Jury List as a storekeeper and in the 1845 census, as a publican.

With the relationship between Maori and Pakeha being uncertain, so soon after the Wairau Massacre, Governor Fitzroy formed a militia with Dr Monro being offered a commission as Captain of 100 men.

John Palmer called his establishment the “Volunteer Arms Inn,” a house made of earth with a roof of shingles, adequate to supply the needs of 100 people (including 45 labourers), then living in “The Village,” Waimea. He had a ferry boat for transport to and from the eastern side of the Wai-iti River.

Paying settlers were sold 1 town acre, 50 in the suburbs, and 150 in the country. Due to the shortage of the latter, Sir George Grey purchased the Wairau, and many of the Waimea West settlers began buying and moving out to sheep runs in the Motueka, Buller and Wairau valleys.

John Palmer remained and married Mary Ann White, another storekeeper’s daughter, at St Michael’s church on the 16th February 1847. By 1849 they had two little girls, one domestic servant, one acre of land (as a squatter), 1 horse, 10 cattle, 12 sheep and 1 pig. His business prospered.

A friend, Richard Woods of Bramford, wrote informing him that his mother Miriam, and his brother Robert were to come to New Zealand. In the same letter he made the offer – “Should you make any shipment to England and if you don’t know to whom to consign it, I shall be pleased to take charge of anything you send to London as I am constantly in the market with the Cape. Should you require anything from England I will do it for you at a commission, being continually buying in the manufacturing districts.”

New Waimea Inn and Store

Business was improving, and on 28th July 1854, John Palmer had purchased land and let a tender to David Wootten for a two storey “whetherboard” building, 56 feet long, 33 feet wide, and 16 feet high in the walls. It was to be on Section 130.

The *Examiner* of the time announced a clearing sale – “Mr W.R. Nicholson will offer for sale by public auction, on Monday and Tuesday the 12th and 13th March 1855 on the old premises, The Village, a varied amount of general merchandise of just about everything. Also at the commencement of Tuesday’s sale, about 20 heifers and steers. The sale was to commence each day at 11am precisely with lunch at one, and the terms were – liberal.”

In another advertisement in the *Examiner* 1855, we read: “Mr John Palmer of Waimea Village, whilst thanking his numerous friends and the public generally, for their liberal support since commencing business (twelve years hence) begs to inform them that he will shortly open his new and extensive premises known as the *New Waimea Inn and Store*, with an entirely new stock. A later advertisement stated that he now had superior accommodation and extensive grass paddocks.

The conditions under which he held an annual Bush Licence were:- Fee £20; Two good bedrooms be provided; One sitting room; Stabling for four horses. He too, was the local postmaster. Public Balls were held in the large room of the New Waimea Inn – it was a gathering place for various activities.

John Palmer in 1857 owned 58 acres entitling him to 3 votes. In 1861 he was appointed Justice of the Peace.

The Gables 1865

With the bridging of the Wairoa and Wai-iti Rivers, Waimea West ceased to be on the Main South Road and custom dropped off. As a result of this, a petition was lodged requesting a change of location to the Eves Valley corner.

Fortunately, all the documents relating to the erection of *The Gables* have been preserved, including the specifications signed by the architect or designer, James P. Thorne. The contracts with the carpenter James Tomlinson, and the bricklayer and plasterer, John Osborne and Richard Thomas are also preserved.

Sixty thousand bricks were used, all baked on the site. In addition to other requirements, a lamp was to be kept burning from sunset to sunrise. At this time, the Moutere – Motueka and Dovedale traffic was routed through Eves Valley. In Colonial Nelson, accommodation houses not only provided for casual travellers, but also for those droving stock, where accommodation and holding paddocks were required.

With time and the acquisition of more land, John Palmer is recorded in the List of Freeholders 1882 as having 1118 acres, valued at £3,500. Mary Ann, his wife had a further 28 acres valued at £900. As time went on, the family became less interested in accommodation and more in farming.

There were twelve children to be provided for and most of their purchases were local. A hop garden was planted in the name of Charles Arthur Palmer who won the award “1st Order of Merit” at the Melbourne Exhibition of 1881-82, an honour proudly displayed today, on the parlour wall of *The Gables*.

When son Albert married they were given a present of 900 sovereigns, proceeds of the businesses at Waimea West. Thus Albert became the storekeeper at Foxhill when it was the terminal of the Nelson-Foxhill railway, and the depot for Tom and Harry Newman’s coaches to the West Coast. It too was the base from which the Spooner’s Range Tunnel was built.

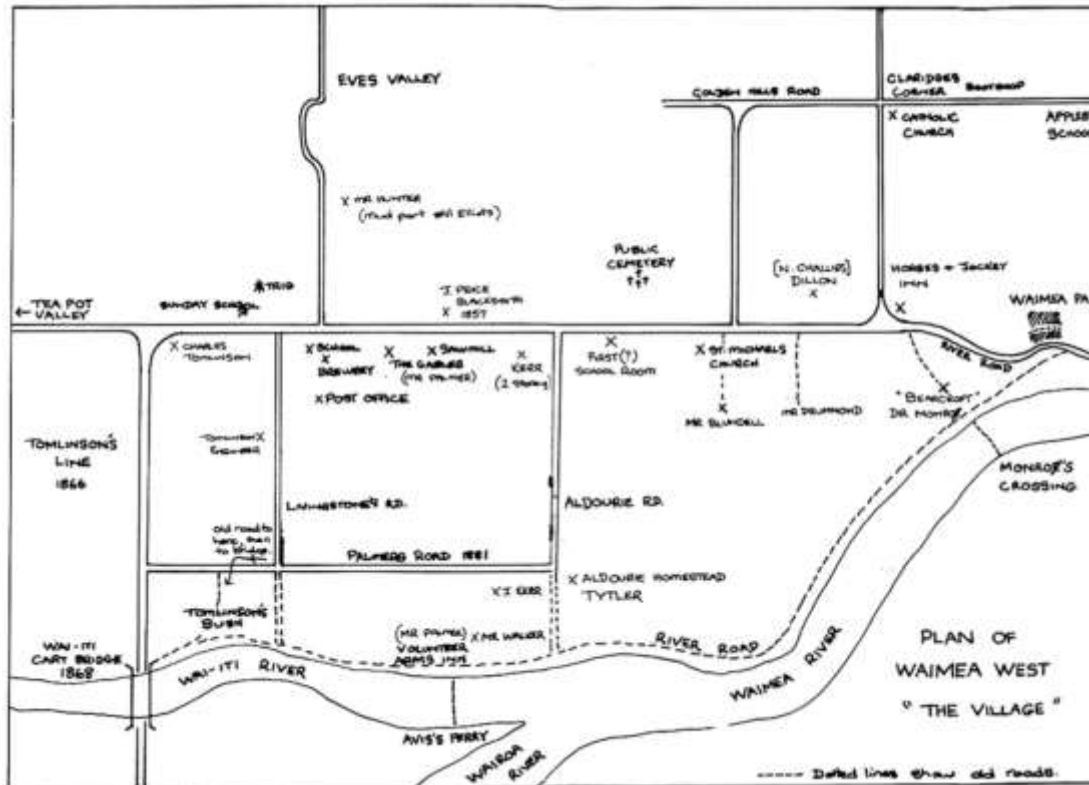
Daughter Ada Palmer married Harry Ladley who taught Ernest Rutherford at Foxhill School.

John Palmer – Prominent Citizen

John’s third home has been considered for restoration under the N.Z. Historic Places Trust. Although not a national figure, it is remarkable so much of his past remains today.

Elizabeth Hanson, research officer for the N.Z. Historic Places Trust, points out “Waimea West has managed to avoid many of the changes that wipe out traces of the past. Many of the descendants still live in the area, and some of the original buildings such as *The Gables* and *St Michael’s Church* remain. Many of the original documents are to be found in the Nelson Provincial Museum at Isel Park, Stoke, Nelson.”

At St Michael’s, members of the congregation place flowers on every grave on Easter Sunday, included among these being that of Miriam, mother of the Palmer family who came to New Zealand, and of John, Charles, George, Salome and Robert. The two children who emigrated to Australia, Henry and Stephen, are there too. **[Correction:** Miriam is buried at St Michael’s, Waimea, West and also her second son John. Charles is buried in Kaikoura; George in Karori, Wellington; Salome Lovell at Stoke, Nelson; and Robert’s grave is probably at Swyncombe Station, south of Kaikoura, and unmarked. Henry is buried at Haslems Creek, Sydney, NSW, Australia and Stephen in Avoca, VIC, Australia. MS]



APPENDIX 10B: THE ENIGMA OF JOHN PALMER BY MARY SKIPWORTH

John did well in his youth. Although the son of a farm labourer, he obtained positions first as an indoor servant, later as steward at Stoke Hall, Ipswich. His employer had sufficient confidence in him to sponsor his emigration to New Zealand, travelling cabin class, with capital to set up a business on arrival. He made a shrewd, or fortuitous, decision not to take up the New Zealand Company's offer of free passage for purchasers of land orders. Instead, he paid his own passage in the *Phoebe* with his brother Charles and sister Salome, and arrived on 29 Feb 1843 with his capital intact ready to take advantage of whatever opportunity came his way. When he purchased land it was based on personal inspection rather than having a section allocated by ballot, as was the case for NZ Company settlers.

The following account has been assembled by a great grandson, Roger Nuttall:

"He brought with him stock to the value of sixty pounds, including groceries, gun powder, and liquor. On arrival he purchased bullocks and a cart and arranged transport of goods to settlers' homes in the Waimea.

Joseph Ward's diary mentions John Palmer bringing news of the "Wairoo Massacre". John settled on Section 129, Waimea West, in the near vicinity of surveyor Cotterell's Pennsylvania Station. Approximately 100 people formed the nucleus of Waimea West on the western bank of the Wai-iti River at this time. On the Jurors list for 1844 the property is known as a store, but by the 1845 census it is being described as the Volunteer Arms Inn. He is described as "a squatter on one acre of flax, wood and fern, one acre fenced, one acre cultivated, barley three-

quarters of an acre, potatoes one quarter. One house, one cattle, one tenant." Also living there was Benjamin Dickson, waiter. The house was constructed of clay.

16 February 1847 John married Mary Ann WHITE at St Michael's Church, Waimea West. Mary was the daughter of Charles and Hannah White of Spring Grove, Nelson.

18 April 1855 John and Mary Ann moved to the New Waimea Inn and John Kerr (Jr) purchased the Volunteer Arms. The 1855 Nelson Directory showed John Palmer as Storekeeper and Postmaster as well as proprietor of the Waimea Inn.

1861: appointed JP

1881: electoral roll storekeeper Waimea West pt sect 130

In 1865 John opened The Gables. As bridges had been erected over the Waiiti and Wairoa Rivers the roads had been realigned and no longer passed the New Waimea Inn.

In 1882 the Doomsday book of properties held in NZ reads "John Palmer, storekeeper, Waimea West, 1118 acres, value 3500 pounds. Mary Ann Palmer 28 acres value 900 pounds. As John and Mary Ann were mindful of their family of twelve children they purchased land. It was like playing a game of Monopoly. When Albert Palmer married and settled in Fox Hill to establish a grocery store they were given a present of 900 sovereigns, proceeds from the existing Palmer businesses in Waimea West."

With the advantage of three Nelson newspapers fully searchable on *Papers Past* I have been able to augment what Roger wrote. The picture which emerges is puzzling. On the one hand we find a community minded citizen, a leader in his small community. On the other, and increasingly in the later part of his life, we find him frequently in court, both as accuser and accused. Often these cases were dismissed, withdrawn or lost. But the impression remains that he (and some other members of his household) was probably hot-headed, making enemies as well as friends.

The name of John Palmer, respected citizen, appears on subscription lists for the Nelson Races, for the establishment of a Presbyterian Church, for the British Patriotic Fund. He was one of a large committee making plans to celebrate the Nelson visit of the Duke of Edinburgh in 1868. Along with other publicans he signed a petition to the Provincial Council seeking greater control of the sale of liquor, in which he no doubt had a vested interest. In 1866 he was witness for two of the people seeking to be added to the electoral roll.

He signed a protest to the Government regarding its inaction following the Wairau Massacre, a petition for Nelson to receive a fairer share of roading expenditure, and a petition seeking representative government. When Major Richmond resigned as Superintendent, John Palmer was among those who signed his testimonial. Election campaigns in those days were launched with an advertisement begging a candidate to accept nomination, with a lengthy list of supporters' signatures appended. John Palmer's name appears in lists supporting Jollie as Superintendent, David Monro as Provincial Councillor, J. P. Robinson as Superintendent, and W. White as representative for Waimea South.

The newspapers confirm what Roger Nuttall has written regarding his businesses, namely that his first venture (*The Volunteer Arms*) was sold to John Kerr in 1855, when Palmer opened the *New Waimea Inn*. At this distance in time his actions seem a little strange – he auctioned all his

stock at the old premises, then moved quite a short distance to reopen with “completely new stock.” Meanwhile Kerr reopened on the old site offering the same services – accommodation and general stores. A little more than a year later the paper again announced an auction at “Mr John Palmer’s Hotel, Waimea Village” of all his stock: grocery, drapery, ironmongery etc, and for the following day an auction of all his livestock. A month after that an advertisement announced that Mr Palmer at the Waimea Inn was offering an extensive new stock of general stores. Again, on 12 Mar 1859, the auction of Mr Palmer’s stock and livestock was advertised, but apparently he continued in business. Maybe these auctions were the equivalent of what we now call an “Annual Sale” designed to move slow selling items, but never intended to liquidate the entire stock.

The *New Waimea Inn* became a centre for the community with mail held there for collection, Mr Palmer the Postmaster. In 1856 a Ball was advertised in Mr Palmer’s large room, tickets 6/- double, and again on 1 Jan 1862 a Public Ball was staged at the Waimea Inn. In 1857 extensive advertising appeared for a twice weekly service by spring cart to Nelson, leaving from Mr John Palmer’s. In 1861 we read of the Rifle Volunteers meeting being held there and provided by Mr Palmer with supper. In 1859 Roads Board Assessments were open for inspection at Mr John Palmer’s, Waimea West. In 1875 a harvest celebration was held:

What is usually termed a hop feast was yesterday given by Mr John Palmer of Waimea West to his hop pickers and a numerous body of friends. Sports of various descriptions were indulged in during the afternoon, and in the evening the whole of the party adjourned to the large ball room, where, after doing ample justice to the good things set before them, dancing was commenced, and kept up with great spirit till the small hours to the strains of the Waimea West band, which by the way discoursed some very excellent music. Mr Palmer cultivates about six acres of hops, the whole of which, excepting a few yearlings, will average about a ton to the acre. The land in the immediate neighbourhood of the hop gardens in Waimea West seems specially adapted to the growth of hops, and we may hope that at no distant date these will form one of the principal items in our export list.

In 1857 John Palmer announced a 10% penalty on overdue accounts - Cash on Delivery was expected. In 1866 he sued two small debtors. On several occasions he advertised that trespassers on his land “with or without guns and dogs” would be prosecuted. The 1889 notice advised that poison would be laid, and trespassers prosecuted vigorously. Seven blocks of land are mentioned in this notice.

As the keeper of a Public House, it would not be surprising to find him involved peripherally in various court cases. For example, in 1862 he gave evidence in a murder trial, having known both the victim and the accused, and “having frequently seen them together.”

In 1863 he gave evidence against Isabella Morgan accused of stealing goods from his store – she was found not guilty – apparently her husband should have been the one charged. In 1869 Albert John Palmer (John’s eldest son) gave evidence against 3 men accused of obtaining money under false pretences, using a forged cheque to pay for a meal. They were found not guilty in the Supreme Court. In 1873 windows at the local church were broken and it transpired that the accused had spent the evening in question at the Waimea Inn, playing cards with Albert John Palmer.

Of concern is the record of fires at his property. In 1867 fire destroyed an old coach house and goods valued at £200 - £250 were destroyed. £50 reward was offered for apprehension of the

offender, and an advertisement thanked the public for their help with the fire. Reports of two other fires are quoted in full:

There was a very narrow escape from a serious and strangely caused fire at Mr John Palmer's house at Waimea West on Boxing Day. About 2 p.m. two of Mr Palmer's sons were starting for a stroll just after dinner, when they saw thick smoke issuing from the wall of a wooden out-building at the back of the house, and immediately afterwards flames burst forth. A few buckets of water speedily extinguished the fire which, had it not been noticed and suppressed just in the nick of time, would, with the strong south-west wind that was blowing, very soon have obtained complete command of the building in which it broke out, as well as of the others including the dwelling house. Curious to ascertain how the fire could have originated in a building that had not been entered for several hours, the family set to work to endeavour to discover the cause, which they very soon did. Just outside the building was standing on its edge a new tin milk cooler, and this it appeared had collected the rays of the sun and focussed them on the wall, thus causing the fire. To make sure that this was the origin, several experiments were afterwards made, and it was found that in a very few minutes the heat of the wall on which the rays were reflected and concentrated by the same means became so great that it was impossible to bear the hand on it. Possibly there are other fires, in endeavouring to account for which a gross injustice has been done to rats, which may be attributed to a similar cause to that from which Mr Palmer was so nearly being a sufferer.

Nelson Evening Mail 7 Jan 1888

A fire broke out here [Waimea West] on the farm of Mr John Palmer, on Monday last, resulting in the destruction of four stacks of barley and oats. The fire broke out near the eaves and spread rapidly over the stack and to the adjacent ones, but through the strenuous efforts of the neighbours and friends, about 150 strong, consisting of men, women, and children, a good deal was saved, and three other adjoining stacks remained untouched by fire. Had it not been for the large supply of water brought to bear upon the fire the loss would have been very considerable. The only feasible cause assigned is that a match was dropped during the building, and this had been ignited by a mouse. The loss is estimated at about £150. Mr Palmer is deeply thankful to all those who so willingly assisted and thus reduced his loss.

Colonist 2 Mar 1892

There was also an occasion when John Palmer stood accused of incendiarism himself. Though the jury found him guilty, his conviction was overturned in the Court of Appeal, leaving the casual observer to wonder if the adage "Where there's smoke there's fire" might apply.

11 Dec 1872 CHARGE OF INCENDIARISM. An inquest was held at Waimea West, yesterday, into the origin of a fire which destroyed, on the 30th ultimo, a breakwater on the bank of the Waiti River, erected by Mr. W.D. Scott, to protect his property. The first witness, Sydney Higgins, deposed to having seen Mr. John Palmer, storekeeper, of Waimea West, sitting on the bank of the river, on his own ground, some way below where the breakwater stood, in company with three residents of the same district. There was then no smoke up the river. At five o'clock the same afternoon he passed the same spot, and then saw smoke up the river in the direction of the breakwater on Scott's ground. John Hagan deposed, that on the same day he was attracted to the river by observing a fire, which he thought might be his fence. He saw Mr. Palmer standing at the fire and put wood on the breakwater as it was burning. This was about half-past twelve o'clock. The Coroner committed Mr. Palmer for trial at the next sitting of the Supreme Court, but accepted bail, himself in £100, and two sureties in £50 each.

SUPREME COURT Wednesday, January 8, John Palmer, of Waimea West, who had been committed on a Coroner's warrant for setting fire to a breakwater in the Wai-iti riverbed, was placed at the bar. The evidence for the prosecution was given by us a few weeks ago in a report of the inquest, and it is not necessary therefore to report the case in full. We propose to give only such new facts as came out in the trial. Mr. Fell appeared for the prosecution, and Mr. Pitt for the defence. Sydney Higgins deposed to having seen Palmer, T. Eden, and two other persons, going up the bed of Bad Man's Creek in a cart on the 30th of November. Mr. Palmer came across to me, and we talked about several things. Palmer said Scott was a rogue and had put in a breakwater to wash away his ground, and that they had come up to destroy it. He said something about Scott having money of his. While Palmer and I were talking together, Thomas Eden came across and asked me for two or three matches to light his pipe. I gave him the matches, and then went away. I returned between five and six o'clock. I saw no person there, but I saw smoke up the river. At the inquest I said I went to the place where I had seen the smoke, and found that it was the breakwater that had been burned. There was no particular part of the breakwater burned except bits at the ends. John Hogan, who resides in Waimea South, opposite to the breakwater, deposed to having been attracted towards the riverbed on the day in question by observing smoke rising from it. At a distance of 100 yards, he saw Palmer standing at the north end of the breakwater putting wood upon it while it was burning. David Scott is owner of half of section 113, Waimea West. When he first occupied his land the river was washing away the bank on his property and threatening serious damage. He applied to the Government, and got £6 to erect breakwaters, which had given the river a straighter course. The breakwaters had inflicted no injury on Palmer's land. Witness admitted that bad feeling had arisen between him and Palmer, arising out of cattle trespassing, and that he had been summoned by Palmer for trespass. James Ives, son of the former owner of section 113, stated that the bank had been greatly encroached upon by the river. The erection of the breakwaters had preserved the banks, and Palmer's land below suffered less from floods now than formerly. William Lightfoot, Superintendent of Public Works: The breakwaters had been erected with his approval. They had saved the banks of Scott's land and had probably prevented the river cutting its way into Badman's Creek. This closed the case for the prosecution. Mr. Pitt submitted that there was no case on which to go to the jury. In the first place, he contended that the breakwater was not a building within the meaning of the Malicious Injury to Property Act; that it was not a dam within the meaning of the Act; that it was not proved that the property in the breakwater was vested in any person; and he asked his Honour to take a note of these objections. His Honour said he would, and if a conviction took place, state a case for the opinion of the Appeal Court. Mr. Pitt, with reference to the count that the breakwater was the property of the Superintendent, contended that the existence of a Superintendent should have been proved. His Honour over-ruled this objection, stating that the Superintendent was an officer elected under the Constitution Act, and there was no necessity to prove his election. Thomas Eden was called for the defence, and deposed that he went with Palmer, Tomlinson, and Thorburn, to do some measuring in the riverbed, and to take a sketch of the river. After we arrived, Tomlinson went up the valley to look after Palmer's cattle; Palmer went to see Fowler, who lives on the other side of the river; and Thorburn and I went to make the measurements. We were on the breakwater and on the riverbed about an hour and a half or more. When we returned to Badman's Creek, where the cart was left, Palmer was coming back. There was no fire on the breakwater while we were there. None of us had matches, and we could not smoke in consequence. When Higgins came I got three matches from him. I gave Thorburn one, and spent the two others myself. I did not give Palmer any of the matches. We did not go near the breakwater after that. We could not see the breakwater when we sat at

lunch. Palmer went away about half-an-hour after this, and was gone about half-an-hour. He went through the bush to Eve's Valley to look after some cattle. We did not see him near the riverbed. The breakwater was half-a-mile away from where we were at lunch. Edward Fowler gave it as his opinion that the effect of the breakwater was to send the river straight down on Palmer's land, some of which it had washed away. George Thorburn generally corroborated the statements of Thomas Eden. He did not think while Palmer was away that he could have got to the breakwater and back in the time. This closed the evidence, and Mr. Pitt and Mr. Fell having both addressed the jury, His Honour summed-up, remarking that the act itself was that of an eccentric person, and not an act governed by the ordinary motives of criminals. After going over the evidence, his Honour said, if the jury should consider it proved that Palmer did the act openly, believing himself to be owner, or entitled to do it, the charge of malice might be rebutted. Malice, however, frequently meant little more than intention, and it did not always impute vicious feelings. But the law would, he thought, consider it an excuse, if Palmer did what he did, believing he was exercising his right as proprietor. But did he do it openly? If he sneaked up and did it secretly, the complexion of the act would be different, as the concealment would make all the difference, and would imply malice. If the jury should think Palmer guilty, they should convict on all but the second count. The jury were to address their minds not to what was the name of the offence, nor as to what the consequences might be, for there was always a very large discretion given in these matters as to the measure of punishment. Whoever did it, the act was not that of an ordinary criminal. It did not menace public security; and although arson was one of the very worst of crimes, this was a very different, and really a very slight offence. The jury, after an absence of upwards of an hour, returned to inquire whether unanimity was necessary, and the Judge said it was. After a further deliberation of half-an-hour, the jury returned to Court, and the Foreman reported a verdict of guilty, but wished to add, that although they found such a verdict — because they had no doubt whatever that Palmer destroyed the breakwater — yet they wished to know whether they could modify their verdict. His Honour asked what qualification they proposed. The Foreman: The Jury is of opinion that the act was done to prevent the destruction of his own property. His Honour: Then it still remains a verdict of guilty, because it was clear that he did it intentionally, and it is no excuse that he was desirous of having his own property. A man is not justified in committing any act, the necessary consequences of which is to injure the property of another. The Foreman: We do not believe that his intention was to injure anyone. His Honour: The law imputes to a man all the necessary consequences of his actions. The judge and jury may in a rough way consider the prisoner believed himself justified in such action, but he is bound to accept those consequences. After some further discussion, it was agreed that the verdict should be accepted with the rider attached, which his Honour said he should view as a strong moral qualification, although legally it was not so. A verdict of guilty was then ordered to be recorded. Mr. Pitt asked his Honour to reserve the verdict, along with the other points reserved for the Court of Appeal.

1873 Aug. John Palmer's conviction quashed by Court of Appeal.

There had been earlier instances of John Palmer apparently bending the law, as in the following curious case of public access to the Post Office having been selectively denied. Even allowing for some journalistic embellishment of the account, Mrs Palmer's interruption of the meeting seems quite bizarre. John's letter of rebuttal following publication of the article may be the truth, but one is left asking if that is indeed so, why would such a story have been concocted against him?

10 Nov 1863 PUBLIC MEETING AT WAIMEA WEST A numerously attended public meeting, convened by local advertisement, was held on Tuesday, the 3rd instant, at seven o'clock, p.m., at Mr. Palmer's, the Waimea West Inn, and Post Office, "To take into consideration the state of the roads in the Waimea West district." Mr. John Kerr was elected chairman. N. G. Morse, Esq., J.P., the Waimea West member of the Local Road Board, stated the reasons which existed for calling the meeting, and the proposals which were likely to be discussed. The Chairman then proceeded to make some general remarks on the state of the roads in the Waimea West district, and especially mentioned the road which leads from the trunk line to Mr. Palmer's public house and Post Office, on which some discussion ensued whereupon, in order to bring the subject formally before the meeting, Mr. Thompson moved, and Mr. Morse seconded the following resolution: "That, in the opinion of this meeting, it is highly desirable for the convenience of the inhabitants of this district, that the Waimea West Post Office should be accessible by a public road." He said he hoped the proposition would be carried unanimously, as a Post Office ought to be accessible to everybody, and not, as was at present the case with the Waimea West Post Office, where several individuals had been deterred, by threats of legal proceedings, from even walking on the road leading to it. Mr. Morse stated his entire concurrence in the opinion expressed in the proposition. Mr. Palmer, who appeared to be in a highly nervous and excited state, informed the meeting that the road to his public house and Post Office had been made by him through his own property, and at his sole expense; that it was a private road made for the public use and convenience. Mr. Palmer was here interrupted by the abrupt entrance of Mrs. Palmer. That lady, after fervently wishing that a newspaper reporter was present to take down the stuff that people were talking, declared that she would stop anyone who even attempted to pass her house. The Chairman and Mr. Morse both requested she would withdraw — a demand with which she eventually complied. Mr. Palmer, after this slight interruption, proceeded with his statement. He said that, though he had made the road for public convenience, he reserved to himself the right of allowing individuals to use it; he candidly admitted having prohibited people from walking on it and endeavoured to justify himself in so doing. Mrs. Palmer again entered and ordered the mover of the resolution to go back to Australia, expressed her contempt for all the people assembled, and stated that it was her firm and unalterable determination that no child but her own should put a foot on her road. As the conduct of Mrs. Palmer interrupted the business of the meeting, the mover of the resolution proposed that the constable should remove her from the room, on which that lady retired. Mr. Palmer then proceeded with his statement, and eventually sat down, leaving the meeting in doubt as to the extent of his concessions with regard to the road. The Chairman then put the resolution to the meeting, which was carried. Mr. Thompson proposed " That the Chairman be requested to forward the foregoing resolution to the Postmaster General, Auckland, acquainting him with the fact that the present Postmaster, Mr. J. Palmer, opened a road for the public convenience (i.e. a public road) to his office, as an inducement to the local Post Office authorities to retain him in the situation of district Postmaster, on the occasion of several of the inhabitants petitioning that the Post Office might be removed to a more central and convenient situation; that to this road some of the public only, and as an act of grace, are allowed access, women and children being prevented from using it under threat of legal proceedings for trespass." In moving this resolution, he repudiated the imputation of improper motives which Mr. Palmer had insinuated against him for having proposed the first resolution, and stated that he appeared, solely in the capacity of schoolmaster of the Village School, to endeavour to remove the restrictions which Mr. Palmer had imposed upon certain of his neighbours using the road, seven of his pupils being thereby entirely shut out from access to the school. Seconded by Mr. M. Newth, jun. Mr. Palmer, in reply,

candidly admitted that he had done wrong in preventing the children referred to from attending school, and informed the Chairman that, whilst he continued to hold a public-house license, and the office of Postmaster, the road should be for the free and unrestricted use of the public. Mr. W. Bell then suggested that Mr. Thompson be requested to withdraw the last resolution, a request which was complied with. On the Chairman declaring and confirming the concession made by Mr. Palmer, the proceedings then assumed a conversational character; and, shortly before ten o'clock, the Chairman dissolved the meeting.

REBUTTAL: To the Editor of the 'Nelson Examiner.' Sir — The report in your issue of Tuesday last of a meeting at Waimea West, in which my name, and that of Mrs. Palmer, figures rather prominently, is such a distortion of facts that I feel bound to reply. In the report alluded to, I am made to admit having prohibited the use of the road to the public, to this statement I give my most unqualified denial, no person ever having been stopped from using the road. I deny having admitted having done wrong, and also having stopped children from using the road; and, in conclusion, would recommend your correspondent, whoever he may be, in future to have a little more regard for truth and propriety. I am, &c, John Palmer. Nelson, November 13

Shortly after this John was back in Court, and again his wife seems to have been part of the problem:

MAGISTRATES' COURT, WAIMEA-WEST. Monday, December 8, 1863, John Palmer, publican, was summoned for keeping a disorderly house. The case was dismissed.

[Same court sitting] William White and J. Palmer were charged with having used threatening and abusive language to William Thompson. After evidence had been given, Mr. White was called on for his defence. Mr. White: Can I be examined on oath? The Magistrate: No. Mr White: Then I can merely say that three fourths of what complainant has sworn to is false, and I shall take steps to have him indicted for perjury. I did challenge him to fight, and, had I horsewhipped him, I should have done no more than either of your worships would have done under such circumstances. The Magistrate: Whatever steps you may deem it necessary to take with reference to complainant's evidence, I shall bind you all three over to keep the peace. Mr. White: What Thompson, Palmer, and myself? The Magistrate: No, Mr. and Mrs. Palmer and yourself. Mr. White: But Mrs. Palmer has nothing to do with it; she is not even summoned. The Magistrate: We cannot help that; if the Magistrates are satisfied, it is not for you to say anything. We shall bind you (White) over to keep the peace for twelve months, yourself in £100, and two sureties in £50 each; do you agree to that? Mr. White: I do, under protest. The Magistrate: And I shall bind Mr. and Mrs. Palmer over, themselves in £50 each, and two sureties, of £50 each to keep the peace for twelve months.

John was to appear in court again in 1867, this time for a breach of the arms act. Once again the charge failed to stick, although the evidence shows that he was not averse to bending the rules if need be. One suspects that a disgruntled member of the community may have informed against him to initiate the police action.

April 6, 1867. RESIDENT MAGISTRATE'S COURT. Before J Poynter, Esq., R.M. Breach of the arms act. John Palmer, storekeeper, of Waimea West, was informed against for selling on or about the 15th November last, 7 lbs. of shot, half a pound of gunpowder, and one box of percussion caps, contrary to the provisions of the Arms Act, 1860. The prosecution was conducted by Inspector Shallcrass, and the defence by Mr A. Pitt. The following evidence was

taken: Inspector Shallcrass: The information is laid under the 9th and 10th clauses of the Act, more particularly but there are other clauses which bear upon the case. Christian Schwass: I am a farmer residing at Waimea West. I know defendant's store. I was there about the 15th of November last. I can't say for certain. I obtained a pound of gunpowder, seven pounds of shot, and 250 caps. He gave me an account of them. He booked it for me. I had no money at the time. I got the ammunition from his son, who made out the account now produced. I did not see Mr. Palmer himself at the time. I notice the account was made out in the name of Buxton. I had made no previous application for the ammunition before I received it. I was served with it, in the taproom, at the counter, in the ordinary way, by the son of defendant. It is not paid for yet. I got no permit from the Customs before going to Palmer. To Mr Pitt: I can't say what time of the day it was. I did not see Mr. John Palmer there at the time. I saw him the same day. When I entered the bar young Palmer brought me the shot and powder when I asked him. I said I wanted a day's shooting, if I had powder and shot. Young Palmer said they had some, and would sell me some. I said, then let me have it. He said he could let me have it if I signed a requisition for it, this was before he fetched it. I signed one after I had got the powder and shot. The paper produced is the one I signed, I think. The requisition was to the Commissioner of Customs, Albert Palmer wrote it. He was acting for his father, as shopman. The document is not dated. He made me sign it as a document from the Custom House. I have signed requisitions to the customs before. The Magistrate: I don't see how you make out that the powder was not sold. Mr Pitt: I intend to prove that the defendant did not sell it. H. B. Farquar: I am clerk in H.M. Customs. I act for the Collector as Licensing Officer, and sign for him. No permit was granted to Christian Schwass on or about the 15th of November last. I produce duplicates of the licenses issued in proof of this statement. No license was issued to him during the month of November. There was one granted to him on January 19th, which I produce. It was granted on a requisition. I believe the paper marked B is the requisition on which I granted the license marked C. It was to authorise Mr. Buxton. I know John Palmer is not a licensed dealer in ammunition. Mr Buckeridge, formerly Buxton and Co., was. To Mr Pitt: Mr Palmer obtained an order from the Customs, on 4th September last, to purchase a pound of powder, ten pounds of shot and 500 caps, Schwass is known at the Customs as a settler, so is Mr Palmer. I have known the latter obtain orders from the Customs, for other people as well as himself. It is usual for persons to take orders for their neighbours under certain circumstances. They bring an application and get a license in favour of other people. If a requisition is produced and the party is known, a license is given as a matter of course always, at the option of the Collector. During the year Mr. Palmer has had some licenses but not lately. It is usual for persons at a distance to send requisitions to the Collector to grant an ordinary license to a licensed dealer to supply the ammunition. The Court: An unlicensed person selling gunpowder and then sending a requisition must tend to render the act inoperative. Witness: It is not the practise to grant a license, if the powder has been supplied two months or six weeks previously, it would be quite irregular. Mr Pitt said before the case proceeded further, he would like to put one point. The information was not good, as it said the offence was committed against the Arms Act, 1860. The offence of acting as a dealer was distinct from other clauses under which the information was brought. The Magistrate said he would not rule on that subject, as if he did the defendant would be informed against on several special offences. He was not called on to decide summarily, and it would be better for the defendant that the case should go on. Mr. Shallcrass having stated that he had another witness to examine, the case was adjourned until Tuesday next, Mr. Palmer to enter into his own recognisance of £100 to appear on that day.

This case was adjourned from Saturday last, to enable the prosecution to adduce additional evidence. This morning the following witnesses were examined. Mr Urquhart, I have taken the quantity of powder Mr. Palmer has obtained licenses for from September 1865, to September, 1866. It is 3 lbs. gunpowder in three separate parcels, for which he had orders. To Mr. Pitt: I don't remember if Mr. Palmer applied for a dealer's license. He said he thought of doing so, but it was not worth his while. There is no licensed dealer at the Waimea West. There are two at Wakefield. H. Buckeridge: I am a member of the firm of Buxton and Co. and hold a license under the Arms Act. I produce a book in the form prescribed by the Act, in which I enter all sales of arms and ammunition. On referring to the date, November 1866, I find no entry of powder to Schwass. On January 19, there is an order for him through Mr. Palmer, to whom I delivered it. It is the custom to give it to the person who brings the order. It is the custom in the country to do so. I was not then aware Schwass had received those goods previously. Mr Palmer occasionally gets powder from me. I charge him 6s. per lb. To Mr Pitt: I don't recollect when Palmer brought me the requisition. There is no date on it. That produced appears to be the same. Palmer has made remarks about forgetting to bring the requisition on some occasions. I am a licensed dealer. Palmer generally brings the requisition to us for himself or others. This we send to the Custom House, signed by different people, and obtain licenses for them. After getting the licenses, we send or give the powder to Palmer, who pays for it. I know that course is permitted by the Custom House. The paper marked A is not made out by our firm. It is not one of my accounts. We have supplied him with billheads for the purpose of making out accounts. He is charged 6s, and our price to other people is 7s.6d. per lb. We allow him the difference as commission. George Walker: I am a district constable at Waimea West. I know Palmer's store. From information received, I inquired on the 25th of March last, if he had a licence to sell gunpowder. He said he had no license. When I first asked him, he said yes. He offered to sell me or anyone else, some gunpowder. To Mr Pitt: When he offered to sell it, he said he would if I signed an order. Mr Palmer's son was present at this conversation. Mr Pitt submitted that from the words of the information, and the evidence adduced the inquiry should be confined to the 28th section of the Act, to the selling without a license. The Magistrate said he could not control the crown prosecutor or influence him in the mode of laying the indictment. This was not a summary affair. Mr Pitt continued to argue that the only offence with which his client could be charged, was selling without a license, and it was clear from the evidence of the Custom House officer, that he had been guilty of a slight irregularity only in this respect. The permission granted to persons in the country to obtain licenses to sell on requisition to the Customs was the basis of his action, and although the defendant had gone beyond the strict letter of the law, he had committed no offence against its spirit. The fact of his taking the precaution to get the requisition signed, was conclusive of his intention to respect the law, by obtaining the necessary order from the Custom House. In fact, the irregularity was committed to oblige a friend and not for the purpose of infringing the law. The powder in question was sold under the requisition prescribed by law, and it was proved in evidence that the sale was charged to Buxton and Co., and that the money was not received up to the present time. Such an irregularity although a departure from the letter was no breach of the spirit of the Act, which was to be construed in reference to its objects and intentions. On the authority of Blackstone, it might be affirmed that this was the way to interpret an Act of parliament, and the ruling of other eminent legal authorities was to the same purpose. The Act never contemplated the punishment of two men who were out sporting, if one received ammunition from another in a similar way, and yet such a result would obtain if the strict letter of the law were enforced. Palmer had committed an irregularity to oblige a friend, and had been prevented by an accident, as would be shown in evidence, from making himself safe by applying

to the Customs. His conduct had been all fair and straightforward, the intention was to act through the Custom House, and to obtain a license in the usual way. This was an indictable offence, and he was aware that the case might be sent to the Supreme Court, but he put it to the Magistrate whether he would not act wisely in dismissing it on the facts and not send it to a jury, who would be sure to refuse to convict where there had been no real breach of the Act. Mr Pitt called Albert John Palmer, who said: I am son of the defendant, I recollect Schwass coming in November last, to the shop. I think it was about the 10th. He first had something to drink, after a time he asked if we had any powder and shot. I said yes, and would let him have some, if he signed an order. We sold to different persons, I acted as my father's servant, I had no license. The Magistrate: I don't see how you can persist when the very first clause in the Act, prohibits the sale without a license. Mr Pitt: He was not acting as a dealer. The Magistrate: I shall act in this way, I shall sum up as to the selling, and leave the Crown Prosecutor to bring an indictment in any way he thinks proper. It is not a summary proceeding, and this is a reason why you should not persist. Witness: Schwass signed the requisition marked B, I wrote it, and he signed it, at the time he got the powder and shot. The requisition was put in the cash box, intending to be taken to town, but it was forgotten. My father said it should have been taken before. The blank was left for Buxton & Co, to fill in. He got half a pound of powder only, although the order was written out for a pound. The account was usually made out to Buxton. My father came to town between November and January but forgot to take the requisition. I heard Constable Walker ask my father if he had a license, he said, no. I heard all that was said in the store. I did not hear the word yes and afterwards no. I made out the account produced. The Magistrate said whilst disposed not to send the case for trial, he felt that the defendant was liable under the first clause of the act, which distinctly prohibited him from dealing without a license. The forms of the Schedule had also been departed from. He had no authority to sell, and ought to have obtained a license. Not to do so was to cheat the revenue, and the defendant was fully aware of what he was doing and had rendered himself liable to a charge of misdemeanour under the 30th clause. The keeping an account with Buxton & Co., looked like a contrivance to evade the act. Whilst contending that Palmer ought to have taken out a license, he did not think the act contemplated a penalty on persons who sold a small quantity of powder for sporting purposes. He would leave it to the Crown Solicitor to act as he thought proper in preferring another indictment, but he should dismiss this case for the reasons he had stated.

The cases outlined above are all definitely associated with John Palmer, publican of Waimea West. There were at least two other John Palmers in the Nelson area at this time, and there are several reports of a John Palmer appearing in court, as accuser or as accused, where the identity is not clear. For example, in 1876 in the Resident Magistrate's Court at Spring Grove, Henry Brown was charged with assaulting John Palmer and fined 20s and costs. A cross action brought by Brown was dismissed because it had happened twelve months previously. Again in 1876 at Spring Grove Drum was charged with assaulting John Palmer, fined £1 pound and costs. At the same session John Palmer was sued for wages due, for another debt and for trespass of his stock – he lost all three cases. In 1877 the Court at Richmond heard a complaint against John Palmer for using abusive language, but as it had occurred in his hop garden which was not a public place the charge was dismissed. Dron sued John Palmer for cattle trespass, but the case was withdrawn.

1876 at Spring Grove John Palmer v. W. M. Thomson: This was a case of alleged assault, but the Bench, after hearing the evidence, dismissed it. John Palmer v. Robert Thomson — this was another assault case. It appeared that Palmer called Thomson everything but a gentleman, when

defendant jumped out of a trap he was riding in and gave him a shaking. He was fined 10s and costs in consequence of his taking the law into his own hands.

Robert Thomson v. John Palmer. — Charge of using abusive and insulting language on the same date as the Assault above complained of was committed. The Bench fined Palmer 10s and costs. In this and the former case the Bench had considerable difficulty in getting at the truth, in consequence of the eccentric manner of the defendant Palmer, who would insist upon commenting on plaintiff's evidence as he was giving it.

At least some of these cases, or similar ones, must have referred to “our” John Palmer, judging from the His Honour’s outburst in the following case:

1876 22 February Attempt to Murder. Albert John Palmer, Waimea West, charged with attempting to murder his father, John Palmer. His Worship: The Palmer family again! The Inspector of Police said that he was not prepared to go on with the case just then and must ask for a remand for eight days. Mr Acton Adams, who appeared for the defendant, asked either that bail might be allowed or the remand made for a shorter period. His Worship thought the request was reasonable. The family was a perpetual nuisance to the magistrates and to everyone else, and the whole circumstances connected with them were most deplorable. It was scarcely fair to keep so grave a charge impending over the defendant for a long time, and he should therefore remand him until Friday, but seeing the gravity of the charge he should require heavy bail, namely, the defendant in £500, and two sureties in £250 each. Messrs T Harley and H. V. Phillips were accepted as sureties, and defendant was remanded until Friday.

15 Feb 1876 Albert Palmer was brought up again this morning. Mr Pitt, on behalf of complainant, asked permission to withdraw the charge, which was granted.

The charge was withdrawn, but not without some damage.

In 1876 John was refused a renewal of his liquor licence, stirring up correspondence to the newspaper. From this date his house, previously the “*New Waimea Inn*” seems to have been referred to as “*The Gables*.”

The old licenses were renewed with the exception of John Palmer's. The police reported that the house had been badly conducted during the last twelve months. Mr Acton Adams for the applicant presented a petition in favour of the renewal signed by a large number of the ratepayers and also stated that the applicant's son, who was the chief cause of the rows in the house, had left the district. The Court, however, decided that, looking at the nature of the police report, the general disposition of the applicant, and other facts of which as Magistrates for the district they could not be ignorant, they were bound in their discretion to refuse the license, because they did not believe the applicant to be a fit and proper person to conduct a licensed house.

A CONTRADICTION. To the editor of the Evening Mail Sir — I was both surprised and amused on reading in the report of the Licensing Court held at Waimea West on Thursday last, that Mr Acton Adams who appeared for the applicant John Palmer, asserted that I was the cause of the disturbances that have occurred in his house. To this I beg to give a most positive denial, as it is well known in the neighbourhood that he himself has been the sole cause of every irregularity. It is also well known that he being such an eccentric individual has not been capable of conducting any business for some years past, more especially a licensed house. I am only surprised at Mr

Adams who so well knows the real facts of the matter, bringing forward such an unfounded plea. I hope you will insert this in the cause of justice, as your paper has such a wide circulation, and if not contradicted it may be apt to mislead people who do not know John Palmer. I am &c, Albert John Palmer Foxhill, June 10th, 1876.

THE PALMER CASE. To the editor of the Evening Mail Sir - I was much surprised, but certainly not amused on reading a letter . . . , in which Mr Albert John Palmer ridicules a professional gentleman for endeavouring to make the best he could of a bad case. He then goes on to say that it is well known that Mr Palmer is such an eccentric individual that he has not been capable of conducting any business for some years past. He does not inform the public that Mr Palmer's eccentricity may have been accelerated by having his head split open some years ago with a quart pot by one who ought to have known better. There is a Sunday-school at Fox Hill, and if Mr Albert Palmer will attend (not as a teacher but as a pupil), I would recommend the teacher to give him for his first lesson "Honour thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee."— I am, &c, Justice, Wakefield, June 12, 1876.

To the editor of the Evening Mail Sir - I observe in your issue of Saturday last a letter, signed by my son Albert John Palmer, containing certain insulting references to myself. It is not my intention to reply to his letter, further than to say that I think he ought to be thoroughly ashamed of having written such a letter of his own father. The matters referred to by him do not interest the public, and I must therefore decline to discuss them in a newspaper, I am , &c. . . J. Palmer, Waimea West, June 12. 1876.

Happily, by the time of his death such incidents were forgotten, leaving his obituary to dwell on the positive aspects of his life.

Waimea West. Another of our old pioneers, Mr John Palmer, has gone to his long home, a victim to old age and influenza. The deceased came to Nelson in the ship Phoebe about fifty-six years ago and pitched his camp in the thick forests of Waimea West. He soon began to take a share in the brunt and toil of developing his adopted country and making it more like a paradise than a wilderness. To meet the wants of the sawyers and settlers, he opened an accommodation house and store on the banks of the Wai-iti, and some years after built the large brick premises on the main road. He gradually acquired land, which he carefully cultivated, so that he became one of the largest landowners and producers of hops and cereals of the Waimea. It is many years since he retired from active labours, and had enjoyed very good health till he was seized with the influenza, and even then he kept about till the last day, when he found himself too weak to get about, and gradually sank till he passed away on the evening of the 10th instant, at the ripe age of 82. He leaves behind him a widow and a large family, six sons and six daughters, all of whom are married, also fifty grandchildren and a number of great-grandchildren, to mourn their loss.

The Colonist 15 August 1898, page 3

APPENDIX 11: LEONARD "RUSSELL" PALMER, [#114] EDITOR *NELSON MAIL*

Obituary: Leonard Russell Palmer was educated at Nelson College between 1916 and 1921. He was a prefect and a member of the First XV while at school. From there he went to Canterbury University College where he graduated Master of Arts in history and obtained a Diploma of Journalism. His master's thesis was on the life of Captain Arthur Wakefield, founder of the Nelson settlement. At university he stayed at College House and was prominent in student affairs.

He began his career in journalism on the "Lyttelton Times" and the Christchurch "Star" and from 1925 until 1931 he was a reporter and later sub-editor on "The Press".

When his career in journalism was interrupted by the depression, Mr Palmer turned to school teaching. After a short period on the staff of Nelson College he was an assistant master at Wellington College from 1931 until 1940, becoming the college's first careers master.

While in Wellington Mr Palmer lectured on economics to accountants at Harle's College of Accountancy. For some years he gave radio talks on current affairs and was a member of the "Lookout" panel during the 1950's.

Returning to his hometown in 1940, Mr Palmer returned also to his chosen career of journalism. He was at first associate editor of "The Nelson Evening Mail", and then editor from 1960.

In community affairs Mr Palmer was very active during his years in Nelson. He was the first secretary of the Nelson-Marlborough-West Coast League of Local Bodies and held that office until 1961. He was a foundation member of the New Zealand Founders' Society.

Throughout his life Mr Palmer was vitally interested in education. His years as a schoolteacher made him a strong advocate of certain methods of education. He was a member of the Nelson College Council of Governors from 1951 until his death. Mr Palmer was chairman of the Technical School committee of the council and had been the council's delegate to the New Zealand Secondary School Boards Association. He was a member of the interim committee which helped to launch Waimea College.

From 1947 until 1961 he was president of the Nelson College Old Boys' Association

At the time of his death, he was in London on a private visit. He had recently attended the annual meeting of the Commonwealth Press Union and was about to attend a meeting with the Chairman of the Apple and Pear Marketing Board.

[The newspaper, as well as printing the above obituary, and a photo, published lengthy tributes from the Mayor of Nelson, and three other prominent citizens.]

APPENDIX 12: MELVILLE ASHLEY PALMER [#120] OF WAIMEA WEST

Obituary: Melville Ashley Palmer, widely known for his active part in farming and local affairs, died in Nelson last week. He was 67. Mr Palmer was part-owner of the farm taken up by John Palmer early in the 1840's, and still farmed by his son Ian. From an early age - the end of his second year at Nelson College - Mr Palmer had to carry the burden of severe crippling from poliomyelitis. In a tribute to his perseverance, the Rev D Hunter said at his funeral: "I have heard

it said in our district on many occasions in the last few days that Mel Palmer was the most determined, brave, dedicated man anyone could ever know. Not only did he overcome his disability by sheer determination, but he also wasted no time in using his skills to ensure that what he had to contribute to the life of the community was not lost." During the 1930's Mel Palmer and his fiancée, Jean Jamieson, met through the activities of the Waimea West Debating Society. Both were keen members before and after their marriage. With an innate love of the land and skill as a farmer, it was not surprising that in federated farmers he was accepted as a leader and held the post of chairman of the Nelson provincial federation from 1961 to 1965. He served as chairman of the committee which supervised the establishment of Waimea College, where his determination was to ensure that the college was accepted as second to none. Until October last year he was a member for 12 years of the Nelson Catchment Board and used his farming experience and his friendly approach to assist in his role as deputy chairman and chairman of several subcommittees. During his years of service, the role of the catchment board in the community has increased markedly. Mr Palmer is survived by his sons Ian (Waimea West), and Miles (Wakefield) and his daughter, Mrs Kay Box of Geraldine.

APPENDIX 13: PAT PALMER [#122H] "WHERE IS THE ADZE?"

Where is the Adze ? [Introduction by *Kaikoura Star*]

In 1857 in Kaikoura, during construction work at the Waiopuka whaling station of George Fyffe, a Maori moa-hunter burial site was unearthed. Historians Michael Trotter and Beverley McCulloch, in their book *Fyffe's Revisited*, call it one of the most significant archaeological events to occur in New Zealand last century. It was the first recorded instance of such a burial site being found.

The main treasures from the discovery were a human skull, one or more adze-heads, and the largest moa egg ever found.

The moa egg, after a journey across the world, is now safely in the Museum of New Zealand in Wellington. The fate of the skull and adze-heads are less certain. One man, Pat Palmer, believes the adze-head is still in Kaikoura, with the owner not recognising the significance of it.

Mr Palmer, who now lives in Christchurch, is one of the third generation of Kaikoura Palmers. His great-grandfather Charles, settled in Kaikoura in 1866.

The link with the Palmers and the story of the moa-hunter burial started with Charles' brother Robert. Robert is believed to be the workman who discovered the find.

According to Mr Palmer, the skull and adze could well have been handed down from generation to generation of Palmers before disappearing recently. He believes bad communication has allowed the object to go missing before its significance was realised.

In the following story, PAT PALMER tells of the missing adze and why he wants it found.

He Tino Taonga Tuku Iho A Missing Adze [by Pat Palmer]

About 800 years ago, an important person was buried at Avoca Point, Kaikoura. He was buried with an adze and a moa's egg. They were uncovered when Fyffe House was being extended in 1857.

George Fyffe, the owner of the whaling station, kept the egg, the adze, and the skull from the skeleton, all together in a "candle" box. In 1864 he sent the egg away to the New Zealand exhibition in Dunedin. From there it travelled to London, and came back to the Dominion Museum in 1966, and in 1986 revisited its rightful home in Kaikoura for a few days, before going back to Wellington.

Meanwhile, the skull and adze had been forgotten about since being seen by J.D. Enys, who visited George Fyffe in 1861. Enys described the adze as "a blackstone adze", a "heavy stone implement", a "polished stone adze".

Dug up adze

According to Palmer family traditions, my grand-father's uncle, Robert Palmer, was the workman who dug up the egg. The first record we have of Robert in Kaikoura is of him wintering with Joseph Ward's first mob of sheep on the Clarence Reserve in 1859, but we do know he was with Ward up the Wairau in 1853, so he may have been in Kaikoura in 1857.

In 1864, when George Fyffe sent the egg away on its travels, Robert was managing his Kahutara run. Robert died in 1865. His brother Charles, my great-grandfather, came down from Nelson to settle his affairs, and came down with his family in 1866 to settle in Kaikoura.

In the 1930s, when I was a boy, living up at the top of Mount Fyffe Road, a large stone adze sat on my father's bookshelves, and there was a skull in a hatbox on top of the wardrobe in my parents' bedroom. I did not think of them as being of any special importance, and I cannot recall any conversation about them. Some time after my father died in 1935, my mother buried the skull.

About a year ago I began to wonder if the adze might be from the Fyffe House site. After my brother Fyffe died last September I asked his son Glenburn if he remembered the adze up in our old home. He said that Fyffe had had it in his house in Christchurch. John Palmer, Glenburn's son, remembers Fyffe having it and another adze in his garage in Kaikoura. It was not there after his death.

I thought he may have given it to the Kaikoura Museum, so I asked Beverley McCulloch of the Canterbury Museum who I should ask about it. She sent me the article "Fyffe's revisited", which she and Michael Trotter published in 1993. It was then that I realised that the skull and the adze were probably companion pieces, and from the same grave as the egg. None of my brothers or sisters or cousins had previously connected the adze and the skull and the egg together, and none of the archaeologists had asked any of us about them.

At the time that they were found, the egg was considered a much more important object than the skull or the adze. We may suppose that when George Fyffe sent the egg away for exhibition and sale, he may have given the skull and adze to Robert, who had dug them up, and who was still working faithfully for him, as mementoes or some sort of consolation prize.

From Robert, they would have passed to my great-grandfather Charles, from him to my grandfather Edmund Oscar. My cousin Andrew Palmer can remember the adze being in the family home at Brentwood when he was a boy. We suppose that the adze passed from his father to my father when the family left Brentwood to live in Christchurch. Andrew does not remember the skull.

The skull is gone beyond reasonable hope of recovery. The adze must be about somewhere.

Olive Green

I last saw it about 60 years ago when I was a small boy. As I dimly remember it from so long ago, it was of a dark olive green to blackish dense stone, about 13 inches long, about 4 inches wide at the butt end, and about 5 inches at the cutting edge. It was about an inch thick at the butt end, sloping up to 2 – 2 ½ inches, about 9 to 10 inches from the butt end, and then sloping down to a rounded edge. It was only partly polished, and one corner had perhaps been broken off, and was partly ground smooth. It had a line or network of fine pimples or bubbles on one face.

I think that my brother Fyffe will have given this adze into someone's safe keeping. In view of its probable history, I believe that this adze, along with the egg, rightly belong to the iwi of Kaikoura. They should both be where the mokopuna of the once proud owner can continue to treasure them.

If anyone knows where it is, could you get in touch with me, or with the Kaikoura Historical Society, or with one of the Solomon family.

Footnote: It is worth noting that while a report in the *Wellington Independent* refers to "a number of Pounamu (greenstone) axes", J.D. Enys, who saw the material recovered by George Fyffe, refers to only one adze-head, and that was of "black greenstone". This was presumably argillite, the use of which, unlike Pounamu, is characteristic of the early period of Maori culture. – *Fyffe's Revisited*

Some additional points from Pat's covering letter when submitting his article to the newspaper:

I am sending you a short article about a missing adze, which I hope you will publish. Perhaps someone will have some memories about it, and I am quite hopeful that the adze itself will surface.

The whole tale of this story has been of people not happening to talk to one another about the right things at the right time. My brother Fyffe knew Beverley quite well, but I do not believe knew about the significance of the adze. Beverley talked to him quite frequently, but of course did not know that he had the adze, so he did not mention it.

My sister, Elsie Brown, was a champion of the family claim that my great great uncle Robert was the workman who dug up the egg, but as I said in the article, none of us connected the two together, and no one thought to ask.

I am also sending you a copy of an article written by my father for the *Otago Witness* in 1927 about my grandfather's trip down from Nelson to Kaikoura in 1866. The reference to the *Kelly gang murders dates this accurately. Jock Sherrard, in his *Kaikoura*, dates their coming to Kaikoura wrongly as 1864, a date from an article based on reminiscences of my grand-father's sister, Salome Wayland, and published in the *Press* in 1940. [*Not the Kelly gang, the Maungatapu murderers have been referred to as the Burgess gang, and did include a Kelly. MS]

APPENDIX 14: ROBERT GEORGE PALMER [#41] , SON OF GEORGE AND ROSANNA

OBITUARY. Born in England in 1848, the late Mr Palmer had a life of exceeding interest. After spending a few years at Capetown his family returned to England, and thence went to the Channel Islands, where as a boy Mr Palmer remembered meeting the then exiled Victor Hugo. At the age of ten he came to New Zealand in the ship *Cresswell*. While serving a term as a lawyer's clerk in Nelson he caught the "gold fever," and made tracks for the West Coast. He was at Okarito, the Lyell, and other gold fields in the Buller district. Tiring of a mining life, he proceeded to Foxton, where for some years he was Town Clerk. About 17 years ago he bought a farm at Manaroa, in the Pelorus Sound, and resided there for 12 years as a sheep-farmer. He was mainly instrumental in forming the Sounds Rifle Association. His was a gentle nature in touch with many of the arts and sciences. In oil and watercolour paintings he took first prizes at Sydney, Melbourne, and other exhibitions. Mr Palmer had a wonderfully clear conception of the heavenly bodies, and followed the science of astronomy very closely. His great wish was to see Blenheim become possessed of a good telescope, in order to lift the thoughts of the people to other worlds than ours. Having had a practical start in his gold-mining days, he was very well versed in geology. It may be truly said: he was a man loved by those that knew him, and greatly respected by all for his quiet and gentle disposition. Mr Palmer was one of a large family, some other members of which are: Mr Alfred Naylor Palmer, of the Bank of New Zealand, Wellington; Mr F. Palmer, electrician in the mechanician department of the Wellington Post Office; Mr C. W. Palmer, secretary of the New Zealand Navy League; Mr Geo. Palmer, of Feilding, and E. A. Palmer, of Wellington.

[*Marlborough Express* 18 Dec 1911, p2.]

APPENDIX 15: LYFORD PALMER [#121B] LAUNCHING THE *KAIKOURA*, 1958⁵¹



LETTING THE WATER COME TO THE BOAT

This 36 ft. launch, built by Mr L. Palmer, a Wellington building contractor in three years at Newtown, took to the water in unusual fashion at Petone beach this week.

After a 45 minute haul through Wellington from Newtown at daybreak on Tuesday, it was found that low tide would not permit the boat to slide from its trailer.

A mobile crane passing along the waterfront was hailed and it winched the boat from the trailer to allow it to rest on the beach. Two and a half hours later, the incoming tide floated the boat off, and by 6pm it was undergoing trials off the foreshore.



FINAL PREPARATIONS AT NEWTOWN FOR LAUNCHING TOMORROW

**READY TO LAUNCH AT PETONE,
WHERE IS THE WATER?**



APPENDIX 16: MEMORIES OF GODFREY PALMER, SON OF LYFORD AND EILEEN [#121B]

**CHIEF PETTY OFFICER RNZNVR
GODFREY PALMER CIRCA 1971**



**GODFREY WIELDS HIS GREAT GREAT GRANDFATHER'S SWORD
TO CUT THE CAKE FOR A SIGNIFICANT FAMILY EVENT**

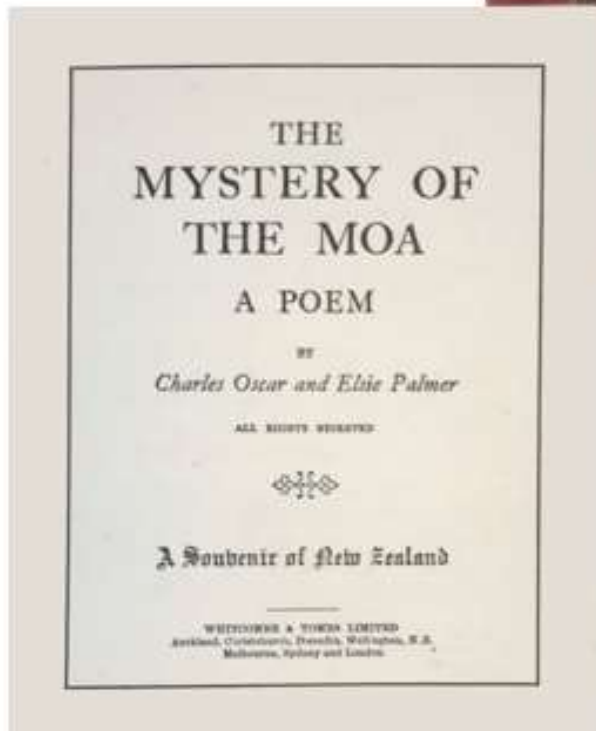
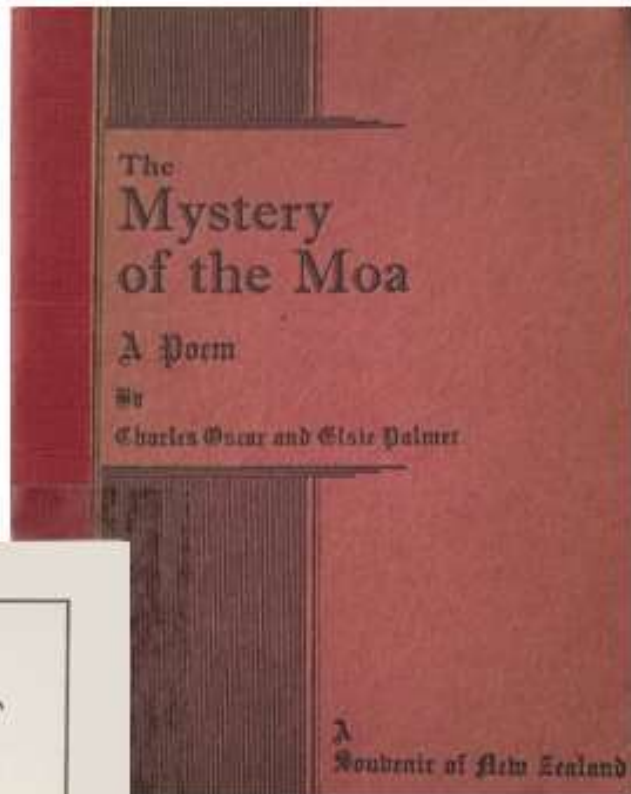
**GODFREY AND MARY'S WEDDING CAKE
WITH A NAUTICAL THEME**



AFTERWORD: THE MYSTERY OF THE MOA

A poem by Charles Oscar & Elsie Palmer

1930, Whitcombe and Tombs



The Mystery of the Moa

Part I.—THE ASKING FOR THE MOA

Pere's dreaming of the Moa,
Lost from Aotearoa,
Lost from Te Wai Pounamu,
Pere's dream of long ago.
Pere of the Island Race,
Tender eyes and kindly face.
Pere's voice is soft and round,
Rolling harmony of sound.
Pere, daughter of the Toa,
Tells her dreaming of the Moa.

Tane of the many days,
Tane of the leafy ways,
Called to Aotearoa: —
“Have you lost my stately Moa?”

Lovely then, the Long-White-Cloud,
Before the time-old Tane bowed:—
“Out behind the ferny hill
You may find him hushed and still.
Call the river, bird and tree,
These will surely answer thee.
Call the least of birds, the wren,
Call the stalwart Maori men,
Call again the Moriori,
Like the Moa, old in story.
Call and call and heed reply,
We may listen, you and I.”

Many voices then were stilled.
All was hushed when Tane willed.
Far along and far along
Hushed were chirrup, trill and song.
Not one sound from leaf or feather,
Silent, silent, all together,
Wind and water, tree and bird.
Each in turn could say his word.

Explanatory

Pere, daughter of a Maori warrior, tells her dreaming of the Moa, the giant bird, survival of sunken Lemuria and lost from Aotearoa and Te Wai Pounamu, the North and South Islands of New Zealand.

Tane, God of the forests and the creatures that dwell there, asks Aotearoa if she has lost his Moa.

Aotearoa, the Long-White-Cloud, replies that the Moa may somewhere yet survive. She bids Tane call his creatures and Primeval Man to ask of them.

Tane stills the forests, the streams, the birds.

Part II. THE SEEKING OF THE MOA

Explanatory

This the seeking of the Moa,
Lost from Aotearoa,
Lost from Te Wai Pounamu,
Bird of long and long ago.

The seeking of the Moa.

Very gravely Tane bowed.
“Call my creatures Long-White-Cloud.
Highest since the Earth began,
Call the last-created, Man.”

Tane bids call the last-created.

Tanned from endless Tropic Seas,
Sinewed like to Hercules,
Perfect-statured, subtle, Grecian,
Nobly came the Polynesian.

Tall, sinewy, erect, the Maori
answers the call.

Kindling in his deep-scored face
Thoughts of many a tribe and race,
Tane, old ere Earth began,
Turned him to the stalwart man.
“Tell, O hardy Ngatitoo,
Didst thou see them slay the Moa?”

Tane, himself deeply tattooed,
is, at sight of the Maori, filled
with many memories. He asks
the Ngatitoo if he saw the Moa
slain.

“So many years, so long ago.
I did not see, I do not know,
Nor did my father, bent and hoary,
Before him was the Moriori.”

The Maori is evasive. He
suggests the Moriori.

Remnant of a milder race
Vanished from the Planet’s face,
Eyes of night with flashings filled,
Slumbering passions, spirit stilled,
Broad of shoulder, massive frame,
Last, lone the Moriori came.
“I did not slay the Moa,” he said,
“Ask the birds and trees instead.”

The Moriori, of a milder race
than the Maori, now comes.

He bids Tane ask of the birds
and trees.

Where crags are clasped by rainy cloud,
Where the torrents rumble loud,
Where the winds drew on and died,
Rolling tree to tree replied.

The winds rolled the giant
trees and woke them to their
primeval speech.

The giant Kauri murmured deep,
“Long the Moa had fallen on sleep
When I was a sapling slim,
Hoary trees remembered him.
Oft they spake with solemn breath
But seldom of his life and death.”

The Kauri, greatest of New
Zealand pines, grows only in
the North.

Sighed Kahikatea stately,
“Axe and fire and deer!
Even while we flourish greatly,
Doomed to disappear.
From sunlight and the stealthy moon
Like the Moa vanished soon.”

Kahikatea, the White Pine.

Said the weeping Rimu,
“My needles are keen
And I should have seen,
But the Rata so red
With the blood of the dead
Encircles my head!”
Said the weeping Rimu.

Rimu, the Red Pine.

The Rata grows around and
gradually strangles the tree
that supports it.

Hinau shook his berried beard.
“His fate I feared!
Black was the night,
Filled with affright
When the Moa disappeared.”

The Hinau, a large tree, bears
berries somewhat like acorns.

“Kapai! Haeremai!”
Said the golden Kowhai.
“I am blooming, spring is nigh.
Let the sleeping Moa lie!
Kapai! Haeremai!”

The yellow flowered Kowhai
blooms in early spring.

Konini sighed, “Supreme in grief,
For him I shed my bark and leaf.
Ages long I shared his day
By level lost Lemuria.
He has passed but I survive
To keep those memories alive.”

Konini, purple berry of the
giant Fuchsia. Also found in
Patagonia.

Ake Ake called
“Never rest! Never rest!
For ever and ever
I lead in the quest.”

Ake Ake (for ever and ever),
small hardy tree; flowers like
hops.

Manuka shedding flake of snow
By the river-bend
Sighed, “He may be sleeping low
Where the fern and raupo blend.”

Manuka, fragrant, hardy, small
starry flowers.

Raupo, bulrush.

Ti tree flashed his bayonet,
“I saw him when the red sun set.
I heard and felt the fatal blow,
But did not see his stealthy foe.”

Ti, the Cabbage Tree.

Harakeke clashed her blades
Flashing in the light,
“Seek him by the bare hillside
Tussocked, wild and white.”

Harakeke, the fibrous flax.

Bent before the wind and rain.
Moaned the Ngaio tree,
“Seek not him by hill or plain;
Seek beside the sea.”

The Ngaio flourishes to the
surf-line.

“I, Pohutukawa flame
Called aloud his lordly name,
As past my headlands dripping red
With unreturning dead
Onward he to Reinga sped.”

Pohutukawa, tree of the far
North.

The winds drew on and rolled the trees.
The winds drew off till scarce a breeze
On the wide solitude was heard.
Then spake aloud each eager bird.

After the trees have spoken,
the birds in their turn speak.

The Huia said,
“I adorn a chief’s head:—
By courage I’m led
Where, shrouded in sleep
And mystery deep,
The Moa lies dead.”

The Huia, a beautiful pigeon.

The Notornis came too.
“I knew! O I knew.
I crept out of sight
In the dark of the night.
I had no flight.
What could I do?
What could I do!”

Notornis, probably now
extinct. [Since found to have
survived.]

“Kooreah! Kooreah! More wet! More wet!”
The weka cried, “The hills forget.
Birds of forest, stream and fern,
We go our ways and never return.”

Kooreah, the eerie cry of the
Weka or Woodhen.

Said the sturdy Kiwi,
“Where the Moa was known
I am his kin.
Lest his fate be my own
I move in the starlight,
The last and alone.”

Kiwi, nocturnal.

“Pooh! Pooh! What an ado!”
Said the Shining Cuckoo.
“I’ll change my abode
To be out of the road.”
To the far Islands he flew.
“What an ado! Pooh! Pooh!”

The Cuckoo migrates to the
tropical islands.

Said the plaintive Miro Miro,
“Wasn’t he a mighty hero?
I am such a doleful fellow
With my breast of dirty yellow.
Pit a wit! Pit a wit!
In my heart I have been hit!
Pit a wit! Pit a wit!”

The Tom Tit.

“Pretty Dick! Pretty Dick!
The taiaha quick!
His blood on my head
Was splashed as I fled.”
Said the pert Paroquet.
“Pretty Dick! Pretty Dick!”

Pretty Dick, a little Kaka.
Taiaha, staff or weapon.

Spake the torpid Tuatara,
“I am so old,
Life’s stream runs cold.
I lie on my bed.
Was I waking or dreaming,
Or did I hear screaming?
I lay on my bed
My kinsmen are dead.”

The Tuatara, the ancient torpid
lizard, seeming almost lifeless.

“From the dread of that night
My whiskers are white!
Far o’er the Wainui
The screams of that Bird
In terror I heard.
I am still affright,”
Said the quivering Tui.

The Tui, or Parson Bird, with
his white tufts, has a deeper
ringing note.

As the long day was closing,
Ruru woke from his dozing.
“Morepork! Morepork!
What was all of the talk?
Morepork!” he cried,
“Has he died? Has he died!
Morepork! Morepork!”

The Owl, with his strange cry.

Said the patient Tane then,
“We vainly ask trees, birds or men.”

From her softly creeping cloud
Aotearoa bowed,
Turning into every place
Longing eyes and wistful face.

She heard the shoreward climbing wave
Break by beetling cliff and cave,
By Spirits Bay where Reinga waits,
Where Terawhiti guards the Straits,
By Ruakuke’s lonely isle,
By many a mountain’s wintry pile,
By ravines dark and wild and dread,
Rain-clouds sweeping overhead.

Suddenly a rumour ran—
“Mighty bone of ancient man,
Monster reptile, beast or bird.”
Owen, where he waited, heard.

Part III.—THE FINDING OF THE MOA

Ha! The Pakeha was brave!
Ha! The Pakeha was grave!
Fragment only of a bone,
Long he pondered it alone.
Finally he gave his word—
“Massive bone of mighty bird.”

Spake the hoary Father then,
All his winters ten times ten,
“Dig ye where the fern is red
By the stony riverbed.
Where the tussocked hill-side white
Shimmers in the pale moonlight.
Dig ye where the birches black
Mourn beside the narrow track.”

They dig and gathered from the clay
Dread in death the Moa lay.

Right and left the mists were rolled,
Morning lifted rose and gold.
Rangatira, eager Toa,
Heard the finding of the Moa.
From the carven portico,
From the Maimai crouching low,

Aotearoa herself looks over the
lands and shores, but fails to
see any trace of the vanished
Moa.

Reinga, whence the spirits of
the dead were believed to take
their departure.

Suddenly it is noised abroad
that some gigantic bone has
been found. The man of
science hears.

Explanatory

The Professor pronounces the
fragment of bone to be from a
mighty bird.

The hoary Maori Father bids
the younger men dig.

Digging with the adze of stone,
they unearth the Moa.

The Hapu or sub-tribe hastens
to view the great bird.

Maimai, a lowly whare or
temporary shelter.

Tama, maiden child and dame
Eager all the Hapu came.
Each in turn his Tapu spake,
Sacred claim that none dare break.

“Why further seek ye!”
Said the Ariki.
“Mine is her egg,
‘Tis the thick of my leg,”
Said the Ariki.

“Mine is the gizzard,
I serve the green Lizard,”
Said Rua the Wizard.
“Blood must be shed,
Mine the living, his the dead.”

Tamahini was shy.
She murmured “Kapai
His skin for a mat.”
Her brown warrior said,
“Or a soft bridal bed.
I give you that.”

Tamaiti said, “Whoo!
If that fellow flew—
But! Where are his wings?”
He starts with affright
At dead of the night
When he dreams of such things.

Spake the hoary Father then,
All his winters ten times ten,
“With my fathers I must sleep,
Let the Wharetapu keep
All that has been seen and heard
Of Aotearoa’s bird.”

Like to streams that leap again
From the hills refreshed with rain
Came the Priest with words sublime,
Treasured from the olden time.
“Say the Karakia slowly.
Treasure that which should be holy.
Out where radiant mornings rise
Sacred Hawaiki lies.
There, secure from mortal strife,
Surely we may share his life.”

Each made Tapu or sacred his
portion.

The Ariki or High Chief makes
something sacred as part of
himself.

The Maori believed that when
he was about to die a green
lizard came to lead his spirit to
the place of Po or Darkness.
The Tohunga probably kept a
tame lizard for the occasion.

The maiden desired the Moa’s
skin for a garment. The warrior
whose hand she had pressed
made it hers for a sleeping
mat.

The little boy was startled at
the sight of the great bird. His
sleep is often broken by his
fevered recollections.

The Maori kept the bones of
his mighty ancestors, and on
sacred occasions these were
shown by the tohungas, or
priests, to the people.

The Priest bids say the prayers
for such occasions and points
onwards to Hawaiki and the
fuller life to be shared with all
who have gone thither.

Part IV.—THE MOURNING FOR THE MOA

Explanatory

By the hollow-sounding shore,
Rolling, rolling evermore,
Deep and solemn Tangaroa,
Mourning for the vanished Moa.

Nature mourns for the giant
bird.

Aotearoa said,
“Let the proper rites be paid.
Bid the fleet-winged Kereru
Call them with her gentle coo.

The fleet-winged pigeon is sent
to summon the creatures of
Tane.

Call the rugged Aorangi,
Call Tongariro to the Tangi:
Taranaki, lone is he
Waiting by the western sea.
Ocean rumbles from her bed,
Tapuaenuku answers dread,
Where the Rainbow’s footsteps are,
And lingers long the Morning Star.

Taranaki, Mt. Egmont.

Tapunaenuku, “Footsteps of the
Rainbow,” giant of the
Kaikouras.

Call Waitangi, weeping water,
Lone Waitaki, icy daughter:
Where Waikato takes his fill
From birded Taupo wide and still,
Where Wanaka mirrors far below
Papa’s blush and Rangī’s glow.
Call my creatures wild and free.
Call North and South from sea to sea.”

The Lakes reflect the blushes
of Papa, the Earth, and of
Rangī, the Heaven.

Solemn they came till near the place,
Gravely stood in a little space,
Gave the melancholy cry
And measured voices made reply.

As they came near to the place
of mourning they sent a wailing
cry before them. Those who
watch by the dead give answer.

Each in turn they bowed the head,
Silent looked upon the dead,
Heavy was the hush, but brief:
Thus their sorrow found relief.

Each will do something to
shake off his heaviness of
heart.

“Mine the graceful Poi or Haka,”
Said the tiny Tiwai Waka.

The Fantail will dance.

“Mine is the Poi,”
Said the drooping Toi Toi.
“Down by my stream
I nod and I dream.
I’ll dance the Poi.”

The Toi Toi will dance the Poi.

There Mauru beats in vain,
Where Tonga widens winter's reign,
From crags of fear where the sweeping cloud
Rugged mountain passes shroud,
Ere weird about the desolate height
Stole the Spirit of the Night

From far above the Pahautea,
Called again the keen-beaked Kea,
"Wreathing mist and winding cloud,
Weave them close to make his shroud."

"I, clinging Piki Arero,
Drape around my wreaths of snow,
Where the night-wind softly crying
Sighs a requiem for the dying.
Garland stars of spring I twine,
Moa memories of thee are mine."

"I for his soul
For ever will toll.
For ever the note
Will be glad in my throat,
For bravely he died,"
The Mako Mako cried.

Even as he spake the word,
O what chime of bells was heard!
Broke the morning into song,
Thousand-throated, rich and strong,
Triumph over storm and tree,
Falling, rising full and free.

Part V.—THE KEEPING OF THE MOA

Then the Pakeha was heard,
God-like when he gave his word.
"Dread Dinornis of the night,
Stand him in the people's sight.
Build the Wharekura strong
So to shield him ages long.
Gathered there from crag and glen,
Mighty bones of ancient men,
Reptile, bird and fish, and beast,
The last, the greatest, first and least,
Relics from the fire and strife,
Breathe again the tale of life.
Like to them in fate and glory,
Let the Moa tell his story."

The warm Nor'-Wester vainly
beats where the Sou'-Wester
has heaped the mountains
with ice.

Pahautea, the mountain cedar.
Kea, a large mountain parrot.

Piki Arero, the white clematis

The Bell-bird tolls cheerily.

The Bell-bird's note awakens
the full chime of his myriad
fellows.

Explanatory

The Pakeha says, "Keep the
Moa in the Museum."

Wharekura, red house, where
the young Maori was taught
the traditions, the religion, the
genealogies, etc., of his
people.

While the Snowy Haired replied
In his mouth the music died,
Ere his purpose he could tell
Terror on the people fell;
Ngauruhoe, grim he stood,
Poured the molten lava-flood.

Elbows on their rocky beds,
Mountains lightly moved their heads.
Lake and leaping stream and river
Felt the earth beneath them quiver,
Kiwa felt the tremors run,
Rolling smoke obscured the sun.

When his smoke had darkened heaven,
Then his crater-lip was riven:
Tane heard the mountain cry,
“I beheld the Moa die.
Witness of his strength and pride,
Thus I trembled when he died.”

Tane’s mouth with wisdom filled.
“Man must work as gods have willed.
Age by age the stream of Life
Widens down from strife to strife.
Love and Loveliness and Beauty
Call us each to higher duty,”

“Aotearoa, thine,
Bird and plant and lordly pine :
These of Rongo’s bounty tell,
Keep my creatures, guard them well.
By forest, headland, lake and river,
Make them yours and mine for ever.”

Tangaroa rolling dread,
Starry Rangī overhead,
Touched with his eternal love,
Tane’s solemn words approve.

Heed them, Aotearoa,
Heed the story of the Moa.

While the aged Maori would
reply, the volcano broke forth
in eruption

Mountains moved their heads,
tremors ran beneath the sea.

Ngauruhoe speaks.

The wisdom of Tane.

Rongo, of the higher Heavens.
Tane confides his trees and
many creatures to the care of
Aotearoa.

Tangaroa, god of the sea, and
Rangī the sky, approve the
words of Tane.



SOURCES AND NOTES

Widely used sources are not individually referenced in the text. Chief websites consulted are:

- BDMs New Zealand: <https://www.bdmhistoricalrecords.dia.govt.nz/search>
- BDMs Australia, NSW: <https://familyhistory.bdm.nsw.gov.au/lifelink/familyhistory/search?1>
- BDMs Australia, Victoria: <https://www.my.rio.bdm.vic.gov.au/>
- BDMs England and Wales GRO: <https://www.gro.gov.uk/gro/content/certificates/Login.asp>
- BDMs England and Wales FreeBMD: <https://www.freebmd.org.uk/cgi/search.pl>
- NZ Newspapers <https://paperspast.natlib.govt.nz/newspapers>
- NZ Cemetery and Burial Records from NZSG Kiwi Collection, and from District / City Council websites, Findagrave.com, or BillionGraves.com
- NZ Probates from <https://www.familysearch.org/> Collection: Probate and Court, New Zealand, or from Archives NZ <https://collections.archives.govt.nz/en-GB/web/arena#/>

Sources and Notes individually referenced from the text:

- 1 Amy Palmer married Alfred Perrin, 1866-1948, a storekeeper in Kilbirnie, Wellington. Their son, Alfred Charles Perrin 1893-1958, was the journalist who interviewed his aunt Salome (Palmer) Wayland of Kaikoura in 1940.
- 2 *Otago Witness*, 4 Oct 1927 page 76 “*Nelson to Kaikoura in 1866*”
<https://paperspast.natlib.govt.nz/newspapers>
Comments: * Oscar Palmer refers to Bramford being in Essex, though it was in Suffolk.
* In the 1830s Charles was in the Royal Navy in the Mediterranean, he first came to NZ in 1841. A timeline for Charles’ movements during his first visit to NZ (page [Error! Bookmark not defined.](#)) does not show opportunities for trans-Tasman trading trips with his brother Henry who operated out of Sydney. One brief voyage was possible while Liardet convalesced in Sydney.
* This reads as if Oscar was uncertain about the number of his siblings, which is unlikely. 11 children were registered to Charles and Emma Palmer, of whom 9 survived to adulthood.
* Salome, in her interview for the *Press* article, gave the vessel’s name as the *Elizabeth*, but her brother Oscar’s account names it the *Isabella*.
- 3 “Charles Palmer, Sailor and Settler” *Press*, Christchurch, 10 Sep 1940, page 10
- 4 Marian Alzier Palmer #106 1898-1977, unmarried daughter of Alzier and Louis Palmer, who inherited the old family home at Waimea West.
- 5 Ian Robert Palmer, eldest son of George Hartnell Palmer #125d, of Oxshott, Surrey, England but domiciled in New Zealand, who died 7 April 1995 at Seoul, Korea (refer probate file, Archives NZ). For a time, Ian held the voluntary position of international general secretary of Mensa International, a club for the highly intelligent. Article *NZ Women’s Weekly*, 26 May 1975.
- 6 Scans of Bramford Registers are not easily accessed online, although I understand that Ancestry.com have a contract to scan Suffolk registers. Some transcriptions exist, but we need to see the original registers or a scan to get the full story. Details of pre-1837 events at Bramford quoted in this paper are as extracted by Ian Palmer, or from films viewed at an LDS Affiliate library. We are fortunate to have had Ian Palmer’s extracts.
- 7 Adrienne Simpson. ‘Palmer, Elizabeth Mary’, *Te Ara - the Encyclopedia of New Zealand*, <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/2p2/palmer-elizabeth-mary>
- 8 www.FamilySearch.org Film 0919618 Parish registers, 1559-1881, St. Matthew’s Ipswich
- 9 1851 census Bramford, image at https://search.findmypast.co.uk/search-united-kingdom-records-in-census-land-and-surveys/and_census

- 10 Emma Webber's NZ death certificate states she was born in Bath, Somerset, to John WEBBER and Annie SHAWNEY (or SHORNEY). Details are confirmed from the register transcribed at <https://www.findmypast.co.uk/search/>. Emma Webber baptised at St James, Bath, Somerset on 8 Feb 1824, parents John Webber, carrier or currier, of Horse St, Bath and his wife Ann. Significance of Kaikoura farm name *Brentwood* remains unexplained.
- 11 Archives NZ [NZC 34/3] passenger register *Phoebe*, also online at FamilySearch <https://www.familysearch.org/ark:/61903/3:1:S3HT-X9R3-Y53?view=index&action=view> John Palmer, Charles Palmer, Mrs Palmer, wife, and Salome Palmer are all "adult" in the age column at FamilySearch.
- Another source for the *Phoebe* is "Our Stuff", by Denise and Peter, now at Rootsweb. <https://freepages.rootsweb.com/~ourstuff/genealogy/Phoebe1843.htm> *Our Stuff* cites two sources for the *Phoebe*: "National Archives reference NZC 34/3", and *Pioneer Passengers* by June E Neale 1982 where the inaccurate ages complained of by Ivan Skipworth have replaced "adult" entries in NZC 34/3. Neale cites NZC 34/3 and the Bett Collection as her sources.
- Whom should we blame for the incorrect ages? In NZC 34/3 some passengers have ages, marital status and occupations included, others show blanks. It would have been virtually impossible to collect these details after the arriving passengers had dispersed. However, a more complete list may have existed in NZ Company records in England. They would have been necessary for statistical reporting to the Shareholders. Gaps could have been filled by clerical guesswork. Thus Donald Sinclair, aged 40, a widowed lawyer travelling alone, is listed as a 28-year-old unmarried farmer, a more likely profile for a male emigrant travelling alone.
- 12 *Colonial Furniture in New Zealand* S. Northcote Bade, Wellington, A.H. & A.W. Reed, 1971
- 13 Palmer, Geoffrey *Reform A Memoir* Victoria University Press 2013 (page 20).
Of general relevance is his comment on page 11, with which I heartily concur:
"I became interested in finding out why my great grandparents came to New Zealand and what sort of life they had here. I was able to discover a lot of information and much of it was very surprising to me; it is possible others will find it of interest too."
- 14 *Letters from Settlers & Labouring Emigrants in the N.Z. Company's settlements of Wellington, Nelson and New Plymouth, February 1842 - January 1843*, London, Smith, Elder & Co., 1843, page 177.
- 15 <https://teara.govt.nz/en/magazines-and-periodicals>
- 16 Manuscripts Dept, Canterbury Museum, Christchurch, NZ: Fyffe family papers, Item 69 Charles Palmer to Mr Bryant, 13 January 1869.
- 17 Archives New Zealand ID: R17053622; 1841-1843; New Plymouth Settlement - J T Wicksteed and F Liardet Company Agents
- 18 Colonel William Wakefield (NZ Company) was another holder of the Order of the Tower and Sword for similar services - refer inscription in Bolton St cemetery chapel, Wellington, NZ.
- 19 One day in the early 1970's, we spotted the *Kaikoura* moored at Picton Wharf in a berth marked "Commodore", not far from the ferry terminal. She still looked very trim, with little changed from John Skipworth's memories of his Uncle Lyford's pride and joy.
- 20 Matheson, Andrew: *Four English Families Settle in New Zealand: Palmer, Taylor, Sunderland, Deacon*. Wellington, 2009 [inter-loaned from NZ National Library] This book is essential reading for George Palmer's branch of the family. Its strength comes from the family records and interviews on which it is based, but it needs updating to integrate digitised sources which have become available since it was written. Some details need reconsideration as additional sources have been made available.
- 21 Alexander Turnbull Library, MS-Papers-1063, Hodgson Family Papers (William Hodgson to John Francis Lee 14 Aug 1846).

22 Allan, Ruth: *Nelson : A history of early settlement*, page 119-120 1965 A H & A W Reed
(quoting NZ Company *Phoebe* report at Archives NZ).

23 Allan, Ruth: *Nelson : A history of early settlement*, page 209 1965 A H & A W Reed
(quoting Joseph Ward diary 1842-1843: "John Palmer bought a good team of oxen and
conducted an excellent carrying business with it.")

24 1845 NZ Company Nelson census

25 Canterbury Museum, Fyffe Family Papers, Box 2 Item 12, 1864, Farm Diary

26 Trotter and McCulloch: *Fyffe's Revisited (Part II : A new look at an old grave)*. *Records of
the Canterbury Museum* Vol 10, pp 84-94, Canterbury Museum, 1993.

27 Murray A. Boyd, *From Donegal to Blackguard's Corner* (privately published 1992)

28 Sherrard, J.M. *Kaikoura, A History of the District* Kaikoura County Council 1966

29 *Marlborough Express* 24 Sep 1873 at <https://paperspast.natlib.govt.nz/newspapers>

30 *Marlborough Press* 10 Jun 1874 p.2 at <https://paperspast.natlib.govt.nz/newspapers>

31 *Kaikoura Star*, 7 December 1923 at <https://paperspast.natlib.govt.nz/newspapers>

32 FindMyPast.org 1841 census England & Wales – transcribed records for Bramford, Suffolk

33 *Ipswich Journal* 28 August 1847 Inquest John Palmer
www.BritishNewspaperArchive.co.uk

34 Letter Richard Woods, Bramford, to John Palmer, Waimea West, January 1849, copied by
Roger Nuttall, assume from The Gables box at Nelson Provincial Archives

35 School Admission Records, included in NZ Society of Genealogists Kiwi Collection

36 Vote and Proceedings Nelson Provincial Council - 1857 (re Cresswell passage money)

37 CONNON has been suggested as an alternative to CONNOR in this marriage record.
However, the mother's maiden name is CONNOR in the GRO birth record of her first
child, which makes the CONNON alternative very unlikely. I have not found any primary
record spelt O'Connor.

38 No supporting records have been found for #127f Arnold George PALMER 1926-1988
though he is mentioned in his father's will, and buried in the family plot at Bromley
cemetery, Christchurch.

39 Deed poll for # 186 Edgar William Palmer change of surname to Devereux can be viewed
at <https://collections.archives.govt.nz/> (enter Edgar William Palmer in search box).

40 Archives New Zealand Item ID R24213680 Naturalization Bruswitz, Henry

41 Nelson Provincial Museum, Library and Archives hold extensive papers on these Palmers
at AG 303: Palmer Family Deeds, etc I have not had an opportunity of going
through them, but am aware that original family correspondence which had been
retained at *The Gables* is likely to be included. Letters from brother Henry Palmer in
Sydney might be available to throw some light on that branch of the family.
They also hold the NZ Historic Places Trust Research Report on *The Gables*, and probably
the original of Miriam Palmer's letter to Salome (page 14) which was held by J H
Miller, Takaka in 1947. Transcripts are widely held in the family.

42 In this painting the artist has substituted old-style windows for the larger panes which
have replaced them latterly. The weatherboards appeared to be pit-sawn and therefore
original. The original roof would have been wooden shingles. The viewer needs to
imagine native forest trees in place of 20th century macrocarpa and poplars.

43 "Kahutera", the preferred spelling in recent times for the river south of Kaikoura, is used
here, in preference to "Kahautera" which was commoner in the 19th century.

44 Noted in passing www.BramfordHistoryGroup.org.uk - a good source for village photos.

45 *The Argus*, Melbourne, 23 Sep 1852 page 6, reprinted from *Ipswich Express* (not seen).

46 "Miriam Palmer and Robert Palmer" scan of photo held at Kaikoura Museum from
Sherrard's collection.

47 <https://www.familysearch.org/search/tree/results?q.personId=LJYK-SDX> :

48 Biography Jessie Mackay <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/2m15/mackay-jessie>
Jessie and C. O. Palmer were both writing regularly for the *Otago Witness*.

- 49 The Gables, 398 Waimea West Road, Tasman, fully restored to a high standard, 6 bedrooms, 7 bathrooms, 6 living rooms, 3 garages, with 2333 square metres land (approx. ½ acre) was marketed in 2024 seeking offers over \$2,500,000.
<https://www.bayleys.co.nz/listings/residential/nelson--tasman/tasman/398-waimea-west-road-4005369>
- 50 Two books which have been helpful in considering Miriam and Robert's photo:
Dating by Design 1840-1915 : a new way of dating old photographs, Gill, Stephen 2021.
Family Photographs and How to Date Them, Shrimpton, Jayne, 2008
- 51 Source: newspaper clipping from unidentified community newspaper
- 52 *Christchurch Star* 9 Jan 1935, page 6: "Charles Oscar Palmer, of Kaikoura, who has just published another little book of poems, carries his family's New Zealand history back beyond the Canterbury pioneers. He traces it back in Scotland to an old Inverness family, and he finds the Rev Daniel Morrison mentioned in Defoe's "Duncan Campbell" as visiting the Western Islands in the days of Charles II. Daniel Morrison, his mother's father, came from Inverness to Wellington on an early immigrant ship. He met Elizabeth Cooper on board ship, and they were soon married, and their first child (Mr Palmer's mother) was born at Porirua on May 28, 1848."

Some comments on the above paragraph:

- * Charles Oscar Palmer (COP) of Kaikoura was well read in the English classics, so a familiarity with Defoe's writings is believable. Since details about his ancestors are introduced, we should be clear about his connections. Both COP's mother Elizabeth (Morrison) Palmer 1849-1914, and his grandmother Elizabeth "Betsy" (nee Cooper, formerly Morrison) Twomey 1831-1906 lived in Kaikoura in the later parts of their lives. COP would have had opportunities to hear his mother's and his grandmother's stories.
- * COP's grandmother, Betsy Cooper, emigrated in the ship *Oriental* arriving in Wellington in 1841, at the age of 10. She did not marry Daniel Morrison until 1847, so "soon married" in the above account is a bit of a stretch. When they married, Daniel was aged about 35 and Betsy was 16. However, if they had both travelled on the *Oriental*, the Coopers could have got to know Daniel and perhaps approved him as a future spouse. Daniel is not on the passenger list but could have been a member of the crew, though given the rest of this article, I am sceptical.
- * The article describes COP's mother as "their first child", though she was their second born, the eldest (Henry) having left NZ for Utah before COP was born. I challenge the supposed birth details "at Porirua on May 28, 1848". Daniel Morrison was a mariner working on NZ coastal traders operating from Wellington harbour. A home in Porirua would have been an inconveniently long distance from the Wellington waterfront. I can find no basis for the 28 May 1848 date for Elizabeth's birth. It should have been registered, but no trace can be found.
- * The assessment so far: the arrival of Daniel Morrison on the *Oriental* and his daughter's 1848 birthdate and place are valuable discoveries, if true. Caution – corroboration is needed.
- * A significant comment is that Daniel Morrison "came from Inverness". We don't have any other hint of his place of origin in Scotland. There are about 5 Daniel Morrisons in Scottish records that could be him, and this could break the impasse, if proven. We can ignore "the Rev Daniel Morrison in the time of Charles II" and Defoe's "Duncan Campbell". There would be too many generations between that man and the Daniel who ended up in Wellington to prove a link. My worry is that the suggested Inverness origin may come from Defoe and not independently from anything relating to our Daniel.

Back to the *Christchurch Star*, same page, separated from the above by a new headline: "IN THOSE DAYS Dan Morison skippered a trader, the "Little Palmer" from Wellington to

Fiji. He died in 1857. Elizabeth Morrison came down to Kaikoura in 1869, and was married to Mr C. O. Palmer's father, Edmund Oscar Palmer, in August, 1870. He is still alive, but the mother died in February, 1914. Mr E. O. Palmer's father, Charles Palmer, was born near Ipswich, Essex, in 1818. He was early in the Navy, and as seaman and captain of the main top, he served under Charles Napier in Egypt and under Captain Lyardet on the Taranaki coast. Lyardet was later governor of Greenwich Hospital. Charles Palmer left the Navy to go pioneering on the New Zealand coast. For a while he served Wakefield. He drove bullocks in very early Nelson. He went Home and returned to Nelson with a young wife (nee Emma Webber), a small frame-house and a full stock of farming and dairying requisites. Edmund Oscar Palmer was born at Nelson in 1846. Charles Palmer's brothers John, Stephen and Robert and his sister Salome came out to early Nelson. It was just touch and go with Charles Palmer that he was not at Wairau on that unlucky morning when Te Raupahaiata used the tomahawk."

Comments on this second paragraph:

* The "Little Palmer" doesn't make sense as a name for Daniel Morrison's vessel. He died in 1858 (not 1859). Daniel's daughter Elizabeth didn't marry Palmer until 1870, so the "Little Palmer" was not named for Daniel's family connections. A possible explanation for this mistake is that the "Little Palmer" could have been the vessel used by COP's great-uncle Henry Palmer who has been said to be trading out of Sydney with both Fiji and the North Island, NZ. Henry had a son, so "Little Palmer" works as an idea for him. However, I cannot find a vessel "Little Palmer" in the shipping columns of newspapers in NZ or Australia. Henry Palmer was not related to Daniel Morrison.

* Ipswich is in Suffolk, not Essex. The error comes from the opening sentence in COP's father's interview, page 35, citing Essex as their place of origin. Possibly the error was COP's and not Oscar's, as that article was written by COP from his father's dictation.

* Captain Liardet had retired from seafaring in favour of land based administrative posts when he came to NZ. Charles Palmer also withdrew from seafaring before coming to NZ.

* Ruth Allen states it was John Palmer, not Charles who owned the bullock team.²³

* This is the only known mention of Charles bringing a house with him. Charles was only back in England for 2 months, and it would have been difficult to complete the arrangements with all the other business showing in Charles' timeline, page [Error! Bookmark not defined.](#) It would also have required the *Phoebe* to have had significant unallocated freight capacity quite close to sailing time. Charles had not purchased land before leaving England, and a house would have been an encumbrance until a suitable site was found, which might take time. I reject the house story unless confirmed by other evidence.

* The Wairau Incident occurred on 17 June 1843, about 8 months before the Palmers' arrival in New Zealand. The article seems to have mangled the names of two chiefs, Te Rauparaha and Te Rangihaeata into a single leader Te Raupahaiata.

* My conclusion is that these two paragraphs were based on the barest facts, and that colourful details like a ship-board romance and a kitset house were randomly added using examples drawn from other families. This article does not merit further consideration.

Further Reading:

"Old Kaikoura : te ahi Kaikoura, a tama tea, pokai whenua : being an outline history of Kaikoura County" by E J Watts, 1930 Victoria University. Offsite storage Theses (AS741 VUW TH 5A) [I have not seen this item, but E O Palmer is said to have been a source.]

INDEX OF PERSONAL NAMES

ALLAN	DREW	Ethel Ada 59
Hector Frank 63	John Rendel Meadows 69	Ilma Ianthe 59
ARNOLD	EMMS	William Arthur 59
Harold 78	Frank Chevalier 70	HAXELL
BAIGENT	EVANS	Susan 53
Lawrence Alfred 59	Albert Ernest 68	HENDERSON
Olwyn Muriel 63	Annie (Palmer) 11	Adeline 60
BAILEY	Arthur 68	HILBERY
Elsie Maude 61	Bessie 68	Reginald William 75
BARTON	Charles 11, 68	HILL
John Henry 62	Charles Thomas 68	Elizabeth 62
BELL	Constance Fanny 68	Phyllis 63
Alzier Jane Grierson 61	Frances Thorne 68	HITCHCOCK
BISCHOFF	Frederick William 68	Marianne Wensley 67
Charles 71	John 68	Thomas Henry 70
BOYD	Wilfred George 68	HOWAN
Ellen 66	EVATT	Roydon 77
BROWN	Jessica Charlotte 74	JAMES
Sarah Jane 71	Reginald Langdale 74	Alfred John 59
BRUSEWITZ	Thomas 74	Clara Louisa 59
Agnes Mary Astrid 75	William Herbert Philip 74	JAMIESON
Ellenore Louise Daga 75	FORD	Jane Allan 63
Henry Elis Leopold 75	Edgar Nelson 62	JOHNSON
Leopold Herbert Edgar 75	Edith Emily 63	Arthur Roland 63
BURBUSH	GALLOP	JONES
Eliza (nee TAYLOR) 74	Margaret 70	Annie Elizabeth 59
CHALLIES	GIBSON	JORDAN
Edgar Henry 62	Alexander 70	Rebecca Adelaide 71
CHING	Brian Rees 69	KERR
Alice Edna 78	Charles Thomas 68	Constance Elsie 60
Arthur Henry Cuthbert 79	Grace Beatrice 69	Edith 60
Cecil Hubert 78	Jane (Palmer) 11	Francis John 60
Harold Louis 78	John 69	Francis Leonard 60
Leonard Charles 78	John Gordon 69	Gerald Albert 60
Leoni Lois 78	Joyce 69	Harold Walter 60
Lucy Beatrice Elizabeth 78	Margaret Emma 69	Janet 61
Maurice James 78	Percy Noble 69	KETTLE
Michael 78	Rose Annie 69	Sarah Ann 55
Myra Lucy 78	Thomas Walter 69	KIDSTON
Robin Leonard 78	Walter George 69	Eleanor 60
CLARK	William 68	KNYVETT
Jessie Patricia 63	William Robert 69	Henry John 61
CONNOR	William Thomas 68	LADLEY
Cornelius 57	GILL	Ada Blanche Eunice 60
Rosanna 57	Edith Alice 9, 49, 64	Bertha Constance 60
DAVIES	GLEDHILL	Harry 60
Winifred Humphrey 69	Mary Catherine 69	Harry Clement N 60
DAVY	GOLDING	Lucy Ann 59
Eleanor 77	Ellen Mary 67	LIARDET
DEVEREUX	GRIBBLE	Francis (Captain) 9, 19
Frederick William 74	Emily Jane 78	LIVINGSTONE
Frederjck William 75	HALL	David 61
DICKER	Alfred Bridges 59	Florence Jean 61nued
Oscar Huntley 63	Alfred Edward 59	Ida Georgina 61
	Cyril Claude 59	Isabella Maud 61

LIVINGSTONE continued	Andrew.....62	Elizabeth Anne Helena 66
Mary Louise61	Ella Joyce62	Elizabeth Caroline 77
LOVELL	George William62	Elizabeth Morrison 11
[female].....77	Roger13	Elizabeth W "Lily" 67
Daisy Minna78	OLDHAM	Elizabeth#2 12, 54
Ellen78	Edward59	Ella Maude 62
Emily77	PALMER	Elsie (Saunders-Loder 119
Emily Evangeline78	(female).....67	Elsie McLean 65
Ernest Rudolph78	Ada 60, 72	Emily 59, 75
Henry.....24, 57	Ada Constance.....60	Emily Gertrude..... 59
Herbert Cecil Garfield78	Albert Edwin75	Emily Mary 74
Lucy Emma.....78	Albert John 59, 80	Emma 11, 71, 94
Mark78	Alexander Pallisier67	Emma (Tarr) 11
Mark78	Alfred Naylor.....77	Emma (Webber) 17, 40
Olive Elsie Ellen.....78	Alice.....75	Ena Faith..... 6, 9, 64
Salome#14 (Palmer) ...11, 13	Alison Mary65	Ernest Arthur 76
Victoria Florence.....78	Amy Ellen72	Esther 64
LUPTON	Andrew Morrison.....64	Ethel Rita 63
Jeanie Turnbull59	Annie68	Evelyn Doris Jane..... 66
MARSDEN	Arthur61	Flora Henrietta Clarice..... 66
Arthur68	Arthur Frederick74	Flora Katie 61
MAYO	Austin Trevor62	Florence Evelyn 59
Cyril Lyle60	Bruce Alexander67	Florence Maud Mary 61
MCINTOSH	Cecil Naylor77	Florence Susan..... 71
Annie Rachael74	Cecil Percy61	Francis Philip Morrison 66
Cecil Stanley74	Cecil Watson76	Francis Roland..... 59
George Ronald74	Charles..... 6, 7, 9, 17, 19, 20,	Frank Clifton 77
Harold74	21, 23, 24, 25, 35, 37, 56	Freda Hamilton French 66
James Alexander74	Charles Arthur60	Frederick 76
Jessie.....74	Charles George71	Frederick George 66
John74	Charles Henry Tarr 71, 80	Geoffrey Stevens 64
Mary Ada.....74	Charles Oscar65, 83, 119	Geoffrey Winston (Sir) 18, 63
Olive Magdalene74	Charles Warwick Edwin71	George 11, 13, 15, 56
William73	Charles Webber ... 10, 11, 37,	George Alfred 74
William May74	40, 63	George Arnold..... 67
McKIE	Charlotte Elizabeth76	George Cresswell 74
Catherine Elizabeth75	Christina Elizabeth67	George Hartnell 67
MCLAREN	Christina Rosamond60	George Henry 11, 71, 95
Isabella.....61	Clara59	Georgiana60
MCMURRAY	Claude Ronald.....63	Glenburn Edmund David .. 66
Phyllis Ruby62	Coleen Marjorie Joyce66	Glenburn Morrison 66
MEAD	Conrad George63	Godfrey Francis22, 118
Campbell Vincent60	Constance Minnie61	H [son of Henry, #10] 59
MITCHELL	David William61	Harold Robert 67
Jean58	Edgar William75	Hazel Vera 62
MONSON	Edith64	Henry 10, 11, 16, 55
Margaret Jane70	Edith Alice (Gill).....49	Herbert61, 74, 76
MORRISON	Edith Emma71	Hilda Elizabeth..... 74
Elizabeth64	Edith May65	Hilda Patience..... 61
MORTIMER	Edmund "Oscar" .. 10, 11, 43,	Hubert Conway 67
Muriel Alison.....75	64, 89	Hubert Howard Floyd..... 61
MUSHET	Edmund Sutherland..... 9, 48,	Ian Robert..... 12
Winifred Gladys78	64, 93	Ivy Elizabeth 65
NAYLOR	Edward "Percy"61	James Morrison Webber... 65
Elizabeth Mary.....57	Eileen.....62	James#1 12, 53
George..... 15	Eliza75	James#3 12, 54
NUTTALL	Elizabeth (Mrs) 12, 53	James#4 12, 54
Alice Beatrice62	Elizabeth "Annie" 45, 67	James#5 12, 54

PALMER continued		
Jane	68, 95	
John Allen	67	
John#11	11, 17, 18, 24, 55, 96, 99	
John#6.....	12, 13, 54	
Jonathon	54	
Kathleen Mildred Olive	66	
Laurie Alan.....	63	
Leo Monyon	61	
Leonard.....	63, 112	
Leonard Nowell.....	74	
Leslie Ashton.....	61	
Lorna Jessie	67	
Louis Gordon Bell	62	
Louis Herbert.....	61	
Louisa.....	60	
Louisa Jane	74	
Louisa Matilda.....	75	
Louise Clare	72	
Mabel Louisa	62	
Malcolm Roderick Doug....	66	
Margaret Ethel Grace.....	66	
Marian Alzier.....	11, 62	
Marjorie Doris.....	63	
Mary Saunders-Loder.....	65	
Mavis Henrietta	67	
Melville Ashley	63, 112	
Miriam (Vinson)....	11, 12, 13, 14, 31, 32, 33, 34	
Morton Clifford	61	
Nevill Reginald	77	
Ngairé Winsome	64	
Nina Geraldine	77	
Olga Aenone	60	
Oscar John "Fyffe"	51, 65, 94	
Patricia Ann	77	
Percival James Ladley	59	
Percy	79	
Philip Carrington	67	
Phoebe Lillford	62	
Rebecca Hannah J.....	66	
Reginald P.....	59	
Richard James Alexander..	66	
Rita Jessie	67	
Robert Daniel	67	
Robert George.....	72, 116	
Robert James Garland.....	71	
Robert#16..	10, 11, 15, 26, 58	
Robert#40.....	11, 72	
Rosanna.....	73	
Rose Hannah.....	73	
Roy Vincent	60	
Roydon Albert.....	59	
Ruby Olive.....	63	
Salome#14	14, 17, 24, 57	
Salome#35	70	
Samuel.....	12, 54	
Samuel Oscar.....	67	
Stephen.....	11, 15, 55, 58	
Susan	54	
Susan (Haxell)	12	
T W.....	55	
Thomas Edmund "Lyford"	22, 64, 117	
Thomas Pattinson	65, 113	
Thornton John.....	63	
Valentine Leslie	60	
William Arthur	45, 67	
William Henry.....	75	
William Leonard "Len"	62	
PARKINSON		
James Cooke	78	
PEARLESS		
Herbert Campbell	59	
PENNY		
Kate Gertrude	77	
PERRIN		
Alfred	11, 72	
Alfred Charles Robert	72	
Amy Ellen (Palmer)	11	
Francis Desmond.....	72	
Laurence Selwyn	72	
Maxwell Louis.....	72	
PETTENGILL		
Stanley Eldridge.....	70	
PRICE		
Norman Samuel.....	59	
RENNER		
Archie Cecil	68	
Clarence Robert	72	
ROBERTSON		
Marie Ethelind	75	
ROUT		
Minnie Eliza	61	
RUSSELL		
Edgar Charles	78	
SAUNDERS-LODER		
Elsie	65	
SCOTT		
Cecilia Margaret	75	
SCOWCROFT		
Bernard.....	75	
John Bernard Henry.....	75	
SHAW		
Kathleen Elsie.....	71	
SHAWNEY		
Annie	56	
SHORNEY		
Annie.....	56	
SOMMER		
Amy Louisa Ellen	59	
STARMES		
Jessie Irene.....	61	
SUNDERLAND		
Dorothy Emily Agnes.....	75	
SUTTON		
Margaret Jane.....	70	
TARR		
Emma	71	
TARRANT		
Elizabeth Constance.....	59	
THOMAS		
David Frederick.....	62	
Warren Palmer.....	62	
THOMPSON		
Thomas Leopold.....	71	
THOMSON		
Florence Emily Geraldine .	60	
Ida Mabel Georgina	60	
Percy Murray	60	
Raymond Albert.....	60	
Robert Leonard.....	60	
Robert McGavin.....	60	
Robert Vivian.....	60	
TOMS		
Georgina Edna	63	
TURNER		
Linda Mary.....	77	
VINSON		
Miriam.....	54	
WARREN		
Adeline Beatrix.....	60	
WAYLAND		
Amy Eveleen	70	
Ann Margaret	70	
Florence Kate.....	70	
Frances Isabel	70	
Jane Emma.....	70	
Margaret Elizabeth	70	
Palliser Francis	11, 70	
Salome#35 (Palmer)9, 11, 31		
WEBBER		
Emma	10, 17, 56	
John.....	56	
WHITE		
Mary Ann	55	
WIGHT		
Frederick James	68	
James Grey.....	68	
WYLIE		
Henrietta Isabella Guth.....	67	